# Slope Filtrations Revisited 

Kiran S. Kedlaya ${ }^{1}$

Received: July 24, 2005

Communicated by Peter Schneider


#### Abstract

We give a "second generation" exposition of the slope filtration theorem for modules with Frobenius action over the Robba ring, providing a number of simplifications in the arguments. Some of these are inspired by parallel work of Hartl and Pink, which points out some analogies with the formalism of stable vector bundles.


2000 Mathematics Subject Classification: 14F30.

## Contents

## 1 Introduction <br> 448

1.1 The slope filtration theorem ..... 449
1.2 Applications ..... 449
1.3 Purpose of the paper ..... 450
1.4 Structure of the paper ..... 450
2 The Basic RINGS ..... 451
2.1 Witt rings ..... 451
2.2 Cohen rings ..... 453
2.3 Relation to the Robba ring ..... 457
2.4 Analytic rings ..... 460
2.5 Reality checks ..... 462
2.6 Principality ..... 466
2.7 Matrix approximations and factorizations ..... 469
2.8 Vector bundles ..... 472
2.9 The Bézout property ..... 474

[^0]$3 \sigma$-MODULES ..... 477
$3.1 \quad \sigma$-modules ..... 478
3.2 Restriction of Frobenius ..... 479
$3.3 \sigma$-modules of rank 1 ..... 480
3.4 Stability and semistability ..... 483
3.5 Harder-Narasimhan filtrations ..... 485
3.6 Descending subobjects ..... 486
4 Slope filtrations of $\sigma$-modules ..... 487
4.1 Standard $\sigma$-modules ..... 487
4.2 Existence of eigenvectors ..... 488
4.3 More eigenvectors ..... 492
4.4 Existence of standard submodules ..... 495
4.5 Dieudonné-Manin decompositions ..... 497
4.6 The calculus of slopes ..... 500
4.7 Splitting exact sequences ..... 501
5 Generic and special slope filtrations ..... 502
5.1 Interlude: lattices ..... 503
5.2 The generic HN-filtration ..... 504
5.3 Descending the generic HN-filtration ..... 505
5.4 de Jong's reverse filtration ..... 506
5.5 Comparison of polygons ..... 508
6 Descents ..... 510
6.1 A matrix lemma ..... 510
6.2 Good models of $\sigma$-modules ..... 512
6.3 Isoclinic $\sigma$-modules ..... 513
6.4 Descent of the HN-filtration ..... 514
7 Complements ..... 515
7.1 Differentials and the slope filtration ..... 515
7.2 The $p$-adic local monodromy theorem ..... 517
7.3 Generic versus special revisited ..... 519
7.4 Splitting exact sequences (again) ..... 519
7.5 Full faithfulness ..... 522

## 1 Introduction

This paper revisits the slope filtration theorem given by the author in [19]. Its main purpose is expository: it provides a simplified and clarified presentation of the theory of slope filtrations over rings of Robba type. In the process, we generalize the theorem in a fashion useful for certain applications, such as the semistable reduction problem for overconvergent $F$-isocrystals [24].

In the remainder of this introduction, we briefly describe the theorem and some applications, then say a bit more about the nature and structure of this particular paper.

### 1.1 The slope filtration theorem

The Dieudonné-Manin classification [18], [29] describes the category of finite free modules equipped with a Frobenius action, over a complete discrete valuation ring with algebraically closed residue field, loosely analogous to the eigenspace decomposition of a vector space over an algebraically closed field equipped with a linear transformation. When the residue field is unrestricted, the classification no longer applies, but one does retrieve a canonical filtration whose successive quotients are all isotypical of different types if one applies the Dieudonné-Manin classification after enlarging the residue field.
The results of [19] give an analogous pair of assertions for finite free modules equipped with a Frobenius action over the Robba ring over a complete discretely valued field of mixed characteristic. (The Robba ring consists of those formal Laurent series over the given coefficient field converging on some open annulus of outer radius 1.) Namely, over a suitable "algebraic closure" of the Robba ring, every such module admits a decomposition into the same sort of standard pieces as in Dieudonné-Manin ([19, Theorem 4.16] and Theorem 4.5.7 herein), and the analogous canonical slope filtration descends back down to the original module ([19, Theorem 6.10] and Theorem 6.4.1 herein).

### 1.2 Applications

The original application of the slope filtration theorem was to the $p$-adic local monodromy theorem on quasi-unipotence of $p$-adic differential equations with Frobenius structure over the Robba ring. (The possibility of, and need for, such a theorem first arose in the work of Crew [11], [12] on the rigid cohomology of curves with coefficients, and so the theorem is commonly referred to as "Crew's conjecture".) Specifically, the slope filtration theorem reduces the $p \mathrm{LMT}$ to its unit-root case, established previously by Tsuzuki [35]. We note, for now in passing, that Crew's conjecture has also been proved by André [1] and by Mebkhout [30], using the Christol-Mebkhout index theory for $p$-adic differential equations; for more on the relative merits of these proofs, see Remark 7.2.8.
In turn, the $p$-adic local monodromy theorem is already known to have several applications. Many of these are in the study of rigid $p$-adic cohomology of varieties over fields of characteristic $p$ : these include a full faithfulness theorem for restriction between the categories of overconvergent and convergent $F$-isocrystals [20], a finiteness theorem with coefficients [22], and an analogue of Deligne's "Weil II" theorem [23]. The pLMT also gives rise to a proof of Fontaine's conjecture that every de Rham representation (of the absolute Galois group of a mixed characteristic local field) is potentially semistable, via a construction of Berger [3] linking the theory of $(\phi, \Gamma)$-modules to the theory of
$p$-adic differential equations.
Subsequently, other applications of the slope filtration theorem have come to light. Berger [4] has used it to give a new proof of the theorem of ColmezFontaine that weakly admissible $(\phi, \Gamma)$-modules are admissible. A variant of Berger's proof has been given by Kisin [26], who goes on to give a classification of crystalline representations with nonpositive Hodge-Tate weights in terms of certain Frobenius modules; as corollaries, he obtains classification results for $p$ divisible groups conjectured by Breuil and Fontaine. Colmez [10] has used the slope filtration theorem to construct a category of "trianguline representations" involved in a proposed $p$-adic Langlands correspondence. André and di Vizio [2] have used the slope filtration theorem to prove an analogue of Crew's conjecture for $q$-difference equations, by establishing an analogue of Tsuzuki's theorem for such equations. (The replacement of differential equations by $q$-difference equations does not affect the Frobenius structure, so the slope filtration theorem applies unchanged.) We expect to see additional applications in the future.

### 1.3 Purpose of THE PAPER

The purpose of this paper is to give a "second generation" exposition of the proof of the slope filtration theorem, using ideas we have learned about since [19] was written. These ideas include a close analogy between the theory of slopes of Frobenius modules and the formalism of semistable vector bundles; this analogy is visible in the work of Hartl and Pink [17], which strongly resembles our Dieudonné-Manin classification but takes place in equal characteristic $p>0$. It is also visible in the theory of filtered $(\phi, N)$-modules, used to study $p$-adic Galois representations; indeed, this theory is directly related to slope filtrations via the work of Berger [4] and Kisin [26].
In addition to clarifying the exposition, we have phrased the results at a level of generality that may be useful for additional applications. In particular, the results apply to Frobenius modules over what might be called "fake annuli", which occur in the context of semistable reduction for overconvergent $F$-isocrystals (a higher-dimensional analogue of Crew's conjecture). See [25] for an analogue of the $p$-adic local monodromy theorem in this setting.

### 1.4 Structure of the Paper

We conclude this introduction with a summary of the various chapters of the paper.
In Chapter 2, we construct a number of rings similar to (but more general than) those occurring in [19, Chapters 2 and 3], and prove that a certain class of these are Bézout rings (in which every finitely generated ideal is principal). In Chapter 3, we introduce $\sigma$-modules and some basic terminology for dealing with them. Our presentation is informed by some strongly analogous work (in equal characteristic $p$ ) of Hartl and Pink.
In Chapter 4, we give a uniform presentation of the standard Dieudonné-Manin
decomposition theorem and of the variant form proved in [19, Chapter 4], again using the Hartl-Pink framework.
In Chapter 5, we recall some results mostly from [19, Chapter 5] on $\sigma$-modules over the bounded subrings of so-called analytic rings. In particular, we compare the "generic" and "special" polygons and slope filtrations.
In Chapter 6, we give a streamlined form of the arguments of [19, Chapter 6], which deduce from the Dieudonné-Manin-style classification the slope filtration theorem for $\sigma$-modules over arbitrary analytic rings.
In Chapter 7, we make some related observations. In particular, we explain how the slope filtration theorem, together with Tsuzuki's theorem on unit-root $\sigma$-modules with connection, implies Crew's conjecture. We also explain the relevance of the terms "generic" and "special" to the discussion of Chapter 5.

## 2 The basic Rings

In this chapter, we recall and generalize the ring-theoretic setup of [19, Chapter 3].

Convention 2.0.1. Throughout this chapter, fix a prime number $p$ and a power $q=p^{a}$ of $p$. Let $K$ be a field of characteristic $p$, equipped with a valuation $v_{K}$; we will allow $v_{K}$ to be trivial unless otherwise specified. Let $K_{0}$ denote a subfield of $K$ on which $v_{K}$ is trivial. We will frequently do matrix calculations; in so doing, we apply a valuation to a matrix by taking its minimum over entries, and write $I_{n}$ for the $n \times n$ identity matrix over any ring. See Conventions 2.2.2 and 2.2.6 for some further notations.

### 2.1 Witt Rings

Convention 2.1.1. Throughout this section only, assume that $K$ and $K_{0}$ are perfect.

Definition 2.1.2. Let $W(K)$ denote the ring of $p$-typical Witt vectors over $K$. Then $W$ gives a covariant functor from perfect fields of characteristic $p$ to complete discrete valuation rings of characteristic 0 , with maximal ideal $p$ and perfect residue field; this functor is in fact an equivalence of categories, being a quasi-inverse of the residue field functor. In particular, the absolute ( $p$-power) Frobenius lifts uniquely to an automorphism $\sigma_{0}$ of $W(K)$; write $\sigma$ for the $\log _{p}(q)$-th power of $\sigma_{0}$. Use a horizontal overbar to denote the reduction map from $W(K)$ to $K$. In this notation, we have $\overline{u^{\sigma}}=\bar{u}^{q}$ for all $u \in W(K)$.

We will also want to allow some ramified extensions of Witt rings.
Definition 2.1.3. Let $\mathcal{O}$ be a finite totally ramified extension of $W\left(K_{0}\right)$, equipped with an extension of $\sigma$; let $\pi$ denote a uniformizer of $\mathcal{O}$. Write $W(K, \mathcal{O})$ for $W(K) \otimes_{W\left(K_{0}\right)} \mathcal{O}$, and extend the notations $\sigma, \bar{x}$ to $W(K, \mathcal{O})$ in the natural fashion.

Definition 2.1.4. For $\bar{z} \in K$, let $[\bar{z}] \in W(K)$ denote the Teichmüller lift of $K$; it can be constructed as $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} y_{n}^{p^{n}}$ for any sequence $\left\{y_{n}\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ with $\bar{y}_{n}=$ $\bar{z}^{1 / p^{n}}$. (The point is that this limit is well-defined: if $\left\{y_{n}^{\prime}\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ is another such sequence, we have $y_{n}^{p^{n}} \equiv\left(y_{n}^{\prime}\right)^{p^{n}}\left(\bmod p^{n}\right)$.) Then $[\bar{z}]^{\sigma}=[\bar{z}]^{q}$, and if $\bar{z}^{\prime} \in K$, then $\left[\overline{z z^{\prime}}\right]=[\bar{z}]\left[\bar{z}^{\prime}\right]$. Note that each $x \in W(K, \mathcal{O})$ can be written uniquely as $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty}\left[\overline{z_{i}}\right] \pi^{i}$ for some $\overline{z_{0}}, \overline{z_{1}}, \cdots \in K$; similarly, each $x \in W(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ can be written uniquely as $\sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}\left[\overline{z_{i}}\right] \pi^{i}$ for some $z_{i} \in K$ with $\overline{z_{i}}=0$ for $i$ sufficiently small.

Definition 2.1.5. Recall that $K$ was assumed to be equipped with a valuation $v_{K}$. Given $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, we define the "partial valuation" $v_{n}$ on $W(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{n}\left(\sum_{i}\left[\overline{z_{i}}\right] \pi^{i}\right)=\min _{i \leq n}\left\{v_{K}\left(\overline{z_{i}}\right)\right\} \tag{2.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

it satisfies the properties

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{n}(x+y) & \geq \min \left\{v_{n}(x), v_{n}(y)\right\} \quad\left(x, y \in W(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right], n \in \mathbb{Z}\right) \\
v_{n}(x y) & \geq \min _{m \in \mathbb{Z}}\left\{v_{m}(x)+v_{n-m}(y)\right\} \quad\left(x, y \in W(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right], n \in \mathbb{Z}\right) \\
v_{n}\left(x^{\sigma}\right) & =q v_{n}(x) \quad\left(x \in W(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right], n \in \mathbb{Z}\right) \\
v_{n}([\bar{z}]) & =v_{K}(\bar{z}) \quad(\bar{z} \in K, n \geq 0) .
\end{aligned}
$$

In each of the first two inequalities, one has equality if the minimum is achieved exactly once. For $r>0, n \in \mathbb{Z}$, and $x \in W(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, put

$$
v_{n, r}(x)=r v_{n}(x)+n ;
$$

for $r=0$, put $v_{n, r}(x)=n$ if $v_{n}(x)<\infty$ and $v_{n, r}(x)=\infty$ if $v_{n}(x)=\infty$. For $r \geq 0$, let $W_{r}(K, \mathcal{O})$ be the subring of $W(K, \mathcal{O})$ consisting of those $x$ for which $v_{n, r}(x) \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$; then $\sigma$ sends $W_{q r}(K, \mathcal{O})$ onto $W_{r}(K, \mathcal{O})$. (Note that there is no restriction when $r=0$.)

Lemma 2.1.7. Given $x, y \in W_{r}(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ nonzero, let $i$ and $j$ be the smallest and largest integers $n$ achieving $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)\right\}$, and let $k$ and $l$ be the smallest and largest integers $n$ achieving $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}(y)\right\}$. Then $i+k$ and $j+l$ are the smallest and largest integers $n$ achieving $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}(x y)\right\}$, and this minimum equals $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)\right\}+\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}(y)\right\}$.

Proof. We have

$$
v_{m, r}(x y) \geq \min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)+v_{m-n, r}(y)\right\}
$$

with equality if the minimum on the right is achieved only once. This means that:

- for all $m$, the minimum is at least $v_{i, r}(x)+v_{k, r}(y)$;
- for $m=i+k$ and $m=j+l$, the value $v_{i, r}(x)+v_{k, r}(y)$ is achieved exactly once (respectively by $n=i$ and $n=j$ );
- for $m<i+k$ or $m>j+l$, the value $v_{i, r}(x)+v_{k, r}(y)$ is never achieved.

This implies the desired results.
Definition 2.1.8. Define the map $w_{r}: W_{r}(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{r}(x)=\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)\right\} ; \tag{2.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

also write $w$ for $w_{0}$. By Lemma 2.1.7, $w_{r}$ is a valuation on $W_{r}(K, \mathcal{O})\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; moreover, $w_{r}(x)=w_{r / q}\left(x^{\sigma}\right)$. Put

$$
W_{\mathrm{con}}(K, \mathcal{O})=\cup_{r>0} W_{r}(K, \mathcal{O}) ;
$$

note that $W_{\text {con }}(K, \mathcal{O})$ is a discrete valuation ring with residue field $K$ and maximal ideal generated by $\pi$, but is not complete if $v_{K}$ is nontrivial.

Remark 2.1.10. Note that $u$ is a unit in $W_{r}(K, \mathcal{O})$ if and only if $v_{n, r}(u)>$ $v_{0, r}(u)$ for $n>0$. We will generalize this observation later in Lemma 2.4.7.

Remark 2.1.11. Note that $w$ is a $p$-adic valuation on $W(K, \mathcal{O})$ normalized so that $w(\pi)=1$. This indicates two discrepancies from choices made in [19]. First, we have normalized $w(\pi)=1$ instead of $w(p)=1$ for internal convenience; the normalization will not affect any of the final results. Second, we use $w$ for the $p$-adic valuation instead of $v_{p}$ (or simply $v$ ) because we are using $v$ 's for valuations in the "horizontal" direction, such as the valuation on $K$, and the partial valuations of Definition 2.1.5. By contrast, decorated w's denote "nonhorizontal" valuations, as in Definition 2.1.8.

Lemma 2.1.12. The (noncomplete) discrete valuation ring $W_{\text {con }}(K, \mathcal{O})$ is henselian.

Proof. It suffices to verify that if $P(x)$ is a polynomial over $W_{\text {con }}(K, \mathcal{O})$ and $y \in W_{\text {con }}(K, \mathcal{O})$ satisfies $P(y) \equiv 0(\bmod \pi)$ and $P^{\prime}(y) \not \equiv 0(\bmod \pi)$, then there exists $z \in W_{\text {con }}(K, \mathcal{O})$ with $z \equiv y(\bmod \pi)$ and $P(z)=0$. To see this, pick $r>0$ such that $w_{r}\left(P(y) / P^{\prime}(y)^{2}\right)>0$; then the usual Newton iteration gives a series converging under $w$ to a root $z$ of $P$ in $W(K, \mathcal{O})$ with $z \equiv y(\bmod \pi)$. However, the iteration also converges under $w_{r}$, so we must have $z \in W_{r}(K, \mathcal{O})$. (Compare [19, Lemma 3.9].)

### 2.2 Cohen Rings

Remember that Convention 2.1.1 is no longer in force, i.e., $K_{0}$ and $K$ no longer need be perfect.

Definition 2.2.1. Let $C_{K}$ denote a Cohen ring of $K$, i.e., a complete discrete valuation ring with maximal ideal $p C_{K}$ and residue field $K$. Such a ring necessarily exists and is unique up to noncanonical isomorphism [15, Proposition 0.19.8.5]. Moreover, any map $K \rightarrow K^{\prime}$ can be lifted, again noncanonically, to a map $C_{K} \rightarrow C_{K^{\prime}}$.

Convention 2.2.2. For the remainder of the chapter, assume chosen and fixed a map (necessarily injective) $C_{K_{0}} \rightarrow C_{K}$. Let $\mathcal{O}$ be a finite totally ramified extension of $C_{K_{0}}$, and let $\pi$ denote a uniformizer of $\mathcal{O}$. Write $\Gamma^{K}$ for $C_{K} \otimes_{C_{K_{0}}} \mathcal{O}$; we write $\Gamma$ for short if $K$ is to be understood, as it will usually be in this chapter.

Definition 2.2.3. By a Frobenius lift on $\Gamma$, we mean any endomorphism $\sigma$ : $\Gamma \rightarrow \Gamma$ lifting the absolute $q$-power Frobenius on $K$. Given $\sigma$, we may form the completion of the direct limit

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma^{K} \xrightarrow{\sigma} \Gamma^{K} \xrightarrow{\sigma} \cdots ; \tag{2.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $K=K_{0}$, this ring is a finite totally ramified extension of $\Gamma^{K_{0}}=\mathcal{O}$, which we denote by $\mathcal{O}^{\text {perf. }}$. In general, if $\sigma$ is a Frobenius lift on $\Gamma^{K}$ which maps $\mathcal{O}$ into itself, we may identify the completed direct limit of $(2.2 .4)$ with $W$ ( $\left.K^{\text {perf }}, \mathcal{O}^{\text {perf }}\right)$; we may thus use the induced embedding $\Gamma^{K} \hookrightarrow W\left(K^{\text {perf }}, \mathcal{O}^{\text {perf }}\right)$ to define $v_{n}, v_{n, r}, w_{r}, w$ on $\Gamma$.
Remark 2.2.5. In [19], a Frobenius lift is assumed to be a power of a $p$-power Frobenius lift, but all calculations therein work in this slightly less restrictive setting.

Convention 2.2.6. For the remainder of the chapter, assume chosen and fixed a Frobenius lift $\sigma$ on $\Gamma$ which carries $\mathcal{O}$ into itself.
Definition 2.2.7. Define the levelwise topology on $\Gamma$ by declaring that a sequence $\left\{x_{l}\right\}_{l=0}^{\infty}$ converges to zero if and only if for each $n, v_{n}\left(x_{l}\right) \rightarrow \infty$ as $l \rightarrow \infty$. This topology is coarser than the usual $\pi$-adic topology.

Definition 2.2.8. For $L / K$ finite separable, we may view $\Gamma^{L}$ as a finite unramified extension of $\Gamma^{K}$, and $\sigma$ extends uniquely to $\Gamma^{L}$; if $L / K$ is Galois, then $\operatorname{Gal}(L / K)$ acts on $\Gamma^{L}$ fixing $\Gamma^{K}$. More generally, we say $L / K$ is pseudo-finite separable if $L=M^{1 / q^{n}}$ for some $M / K$ finite separable and some nonnegative integer $n$; in this case, we define $\Gamma^{L}$ to be a copy of $\Gamma^{M}$ viewed as a $\Gamma^{M}$-algebra via $\sigma^{n}$. In particular, we have a unique extension of $v_{K}$ to $L$, under which $L$ is complete, and we have a distinguished extension of $\sigma$ to $\Gamma^{L}$ (but only because we built the choice of $\sigma$ into the definition of $\Gamma^{L}$ ).
Remark 2.2.9. One can establish a rather strong functoriality for the formation of the $\Gamma^{L}$, as in [19, Section 2.2]. One of the simplifications introduced here is to avoid having to elaborate upon this.
Definition 2.2.10. For $r>0$, put $\Gamma_{r}=\Gamma \cap W_{r}\left(K^{\text {perf }}, \mathcal{O}\right)$. We say $\Gamma$ has enough r-units if every nonzero element of $K$ can be lifted to a unit of $\Gamma_{r}$. We say $\Gamma$ has enough units if $\Gamma$ has enough $r$-units for some $r>0$.

Remark 2.2.11. (a) If $K$ is perfect, then $\Gamma$ has enough $r$-units for any $r>0$, because a nonzero Teichmüller element is a unit in every $\Gamma_{r}$.
(b) If $\Gamma^{K}$ has enough $r$-units, then $\Gamma^{K^{1 / q}}$ has enough $q r$-units, and vice versa.

Lemma 2.2.12. Suppose that $\Gamma^{K}$ has enough units, and let $L$ be a pseudo-finite separable extension of $K$. Then $\Gamma^{L}$ has enough units.

Proof. It is enough to check the case when $L$ is actually finite separable. Put $d=[L: K]$. Apply the primitive element theorem to produce $\bar{x} \in L$ which generates $L$ over $K$, and apply Lemma 2.1.12 to produce $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}$ lifting $\bar{x}$.
Recall that any two Banach norms on a finite dimensional vector space over a complete normed field are equivalent [32, Proposition 4.13]. In particular, if we let $v_{L}$ denote the unique extension of $v_{K}$ to $L$, then there exists a constant $a>0$ such that whenever $\bar{y} \in L$ and $\overline{c_{0}}, \ldots, \overline{c_{d-1}} \in K$ satisfy $\bar{y}=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} \overline{c_{i} x^{i}}$, we have $v_{L}(\bar{y}) \leq \min _{i}\left\{v_{K}\left(\bar{c}_{i} x^{i}\right)\right\}+a$.
Pick $r>0$ such that $\Gamma^{K}$ has enough $r$-units and $x$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{r}^{L}$, and choose $s>0$ such that $1-s / r>s a$. Given $\bar{y} \in L$, lift each $\overline{c_{i}}$ to either zero or a unit in $\Gamma_{r}$, and set $y=\sum_{i=0}^{d-1} c_{i} x^{i}$. Then for all $n \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{n, r}(y) & \geq \min _{i}\left\{v_{n, r}\left(c_{i} x^{i}\right)\right\} \\
& \geq \min _{i}\left\{r v_{K}\left(\overline{c_{i}}\right)+\operatorname{riv}_{L}(\bar{x})\right\} \\
& \geq r v_{L}(\bar{y})-r a .
\end{aligned}
$$

In particular, $v_{n, s}(y)>v_{0, s}(y)$ for $n>0$, so $y$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{s}^{L}$. Since $s$ does not depend on $y$, we conclude that $\Gamma^{L}$ has enough $s$-units, as desired.

Definition 2.2.13. Suppose that $\Gamma$ has enough units. Define $\Gamma_{\text {con }}=\cup_{r>0} \Gamma_{r}=$ $\Gamma \cap W_{\text {con }}(K, \mathcal{O})$; then $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$ is again a discrete valuation ring with maximal ideal generated by $\pi$. Although $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$ is not complete, it is henselian thanks to Lemma 2.1.12. For $L / K$ pseudo-finite separable, we may view $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}$ as an extension of $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{K}$, which is finite unramified if $L / K$ is finite separable.
Remark 2.2.14. Remember that $v_{K}$ is allowed to be trivial, in which case the distinction between $\Gamma$ and $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$ collapses.

Proposition 2.2.15. Let $L$ be a finite separable extension of $K$. Then for any $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}$ such that $\bar{x}$ generates $L$ over $K$, we have $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L} \cong \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{K}[x] /(P(x))$, where $P(x)$ denotes the minimal polynomial of $x$.

Proof. Straightforward.
Convention 2.2.16. For $L$ the completed perfect closure or algebraic closure of $K$, we replace the superscript $L$ by "perf" or "alg", respectively, writing $\Gamma^{\text {perf }}$ or $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}$ for $\Gamma^{L}$ and so forth. (Recall that these are obtained by embedding $\Gamma^{K}$ into $W\left(K^{\text {perf }}, \mathcal{O}\right)$ via $\sigma$, and then embedding the latter into $W(L, \mathcal{O})$ via Witt vector functoriality.) Beware that this convention disagrees with a convention
of [19], in which $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}=W\left(K^{\text {alg }}, \mathcal{O}\right)$, without the completion; we will comment further on this discrepancy in Remark 2.4.13.
The next assertions are essentially [13, Proposition 8.1], only cast a bit more generally; compare also [20, Proposition 4.1].
Definition 2.2.17. By a valuation p-basis of $K$, we mean a subset $S \subset K$ such that the set $U$ of monomials in $S$ of degree $<p$ in each factor (and degree 0 in almost all factors) is a valuation basis of $K$ over $K^{p}$. That is, each $\bar{x} \in K$ has a unique expression of the form $\sum_{\bar{u} \in U} \overline{c_{u} u}$, with each $\overline{c_{u}} \in K^{p}$ and almost all zero, and one has

$$
v_{K}(\bar{x})=\min _{\bar{u} \in U}\left\{v_{K}\left(\overline{c_{u} u}\right)\right\} .
$$

Example 2.2.18. For example, $K=k((t))$ admits a valuation $p$-basis consisting of $t$ plus a $p$-basis of $k$ over $k^{p}$. In a similar vein, if $\left[v\left(K^{*}\right): v\left(\left(K^{p}\right)^{*}\right)\right]=$ $\left[K: K^{p}\right]<\infty$, then one can choose a valuation $p$-basis for $K$ by selecting elements of $K^{*}$ whose images under $v$ generate $v\left(K^{*}\right) / v\left(\left(K^{p}\right)^{*}\right)$. (See also the criterion of [27, Chapter 9].)

Lemma 2.2.19. Suppose that $\Gamma$ has enough units and that $K$ admits a valuation p-basis $S$. Then there exists a $\Gamma$-linear map $f: \Gamma^{\text {perf }} \rightarrow \Gamma$ sectioning the inclusion $\Gamma \rightarrow \Gamma^{\text {perf }}$, which maps $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {perf }}$ to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$.

Proof. Choose $r>0$ such that $\Gamma$ has enough $r$-units, and, for each $\bar{s} \in S$, choose a unit $s$ of $\Gamma_{r}$ lifting $\bar{s}$. Put $U_{0}=\{1\}$. For $n$ a positive integer, let $U_{n}$ be the set of products

$$
\prod_{\bar{s} \in S}\left(s^{e_{s}}\right)^{\sigma^{-n}}
$$

in which each $e_{s} \in\left\{0, \ldots, q^{n}-1\right\}$, all but finitely many $e_{s}$ are zero (so the product makes sense), and the $e_{s}$ are not all divisible by $q$. Put $V_{n}=U_{0} \cup \cdots \cup$ $U_{n}$; then the reductions of $V_{n}$ form a basis of $K^{q^{-n}}$ over $K$. We can thus write each element of $\Gamma^{\sigma^{-n}}$ uniquely as a sum $\sum_{u \in V_{n}} x_{u} u$, with each $x_{u} \in \Gamma$ and for any integer $m>0$, only finitely many of the $x_{u}$ nonzero modulo $\pi^{m}$. Define the map $f_{n}: \Gamma^{\sigma^{-n}} \rightarrow \Gamma$ sending $x=\sum_{u \in V_{n}} x_{u} u$ to $x_{1}$.
Note that each element of each $U_{n}$ is a unit in $\left(\Gamma^{\sigma^{-n}}\right)_{r}$. Since $S$ is a valuation $p$-basis, it follows (by induction on $m$ ) that if we write $x=\sum_{u \in V_{n}} x_{u} u$, then

$$
\min _{j \leq m}\left\{v_{j, r}(x)\right\}=\min _{u \in V_{n}} \min _{j \leq m}\left\{v_{j, r}\left(x_{u} u\right)\right\}
$$

Hence for any $r^{\prime} \in(0, r], f_{n}$ sends $\left(\Gamma^{\sigma^{-n}}\right)_{r^{\prime}}$ to $\Gamma_{r^{\prime}}$. That means in particular that the $f_{n}$ fit together to give a function $f$ that extends by continuity to all of $\Gamma^{\text {perf }}$, sections the map $\Gamma \rightarrow \Gamma^{\text {perf }}$, and carries $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {perf }}$ to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$.

Remark 2.2.20. It is not clear to us whether it should be possible to loosen the restriction that $K$ must have a valuation $p$-basis, e.g., by imitating the proof strategy of Lemma 2.2.12.

Proposition 2.2.21. Suppose that $\Gamma$ has enough units and that $K$ admits a valuation p-basis. Let $\mu: \Gamma \otimes_{\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}} \Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}} \rightarrow \Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}$ denote the multiplication map, so that $\mu(x \otimes y)=x y$.
(a) If $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \in \Gamma$ are linearly independent over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$, and $\mu\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_{i} \otimes\right.$ $\left.y_{i}\right)=0$, then $y_{i}=0$ for $i=1, \ldots, n$.
(b) If $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \in \Gamma$ are linearly independent over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$, and $\mu\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_{i} \otimes\right.$ $\left.y_{i}\right) \in \Gamma$, then $y_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}$ for $i=1, \ldots, n$.
(c) The map $\mu$ is injective.

Proof. (a) Suppose the contrary; choose a counterexample with $n$ minimal. We may assume without loss of generality that $w\left(y_{1}\right)=\min _{i}\left\{w\left(y_{i}\right)\right\}$; we may then divide through by $y_{1}$ to reduce to the case $y_{1}=1$, where we will work hereafter.
Any $g \in \operatorname{Gal}\left(K^{\text {alg }} / K^{\text {perf }}\right)$ extends uniquely to an automorphism of $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}$ over $\Gamma^{\text {perf }}$, and to an automorphism of $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {perf }}$. Then

$$
0=\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_{i} y_{i}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_{i} y_{i}^{g}=\sum_{i=2}^{n} x_{i}\left(y_{i}^{g}-y_{i}\right)
$$

by the minimality of $n$, we have $y_{i}^{g}=y_{i}$ for $i=2, \ldots, n$. Since this is true for any $g$, we have $y_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {perf }}$ for each $i$.
Let $f$ be the map from Lemma 2.2.19; then

$$
0=\sum x_{i} y_{i}=f\left(\sum x_{i} y_{i}\right)=\sum x_{i} f\left(y_{i}\right)=\sum x_{i}\left(y_{i}-f\left(y_{i}\right)\right)
$$

so again $y_{i}=f\left(y_{i}\right)$ for $i=2, \ldots, n$. Hence $x_{1}=-\sum_{i=2}^{n} x_{i} y_{i}$, contradicting the linear independence of the $x_{i}$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$.
(b) For $g$ as in (a), we have $0=\sum x_{i}\left(y_{i}^{g}-y_{i}\right)$; by (a), we have $y_{i}^{g}=y_{i}$ for all $i$ and $g$, so $y_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {perf }}$. Now $0=\sum x_{i}\left(y_{i}-f\left(y_{i}\right)\right)$, so $y_{i}=f\left(y_{i}\right) \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}$.
(c) Suppose on the contrary that $\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_{i} \otimes y_{i} \neq 0$ but $\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_{i} y_{i}=0$; choose such a counterexample with $n$ minimal. By (a), the $x_{i}$ must be linearly dependent over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$; without loss of generality, suppose we can write $x_{1}=\sum_{i=2}^{n} c_{i} x_{i}$ with $c_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}$. Then $\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_{i} \otimes y_{i}=\sum_{i=2}^{n} x_{i} \otimes\left(y_{i}+c_{i}\right)$ is a counterexample with only $n-1$ terms, contradicting the minimality of $n$.

### 2.3 Relation to the Robba Ring

We now recall how the constructions in the previous section relate to the usual Robba ring.

Convention 2.3.1. Throughout this section, assume that $K=k((t))$ and $K_{0}=k$; we may then describe $\Gamma$ as the ring of formal Laurent series $\sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} c_{i} u^{i}$ with each $c_{i} \in \mathcal{O}$, and $w\left(c_{i}\right) \rightarrow \infty$ as $i \rightarrow-\infty$. Suppose further that the Frobenius lift is given by $\sum c_{i} u^{i} \mapsto \sum c_{i}^{\sigma}\left(u^{\sigma}\right)^{i}$, where $u^{\sigma}=\sum a_{i} u^{i}$ with $\liminf _{i \rightarrow-\infty} w\left(a_{i}\right) /(-i)>0$.

DEfinition 2.3.2. Define the naïve partial valuations $v_{n}^{\text {naive }}$ on $\Gamma$ by the formula

$$
v_{n}^{\text {naive }}\left(\sum c_{i} u^{i}\right)=\min \left\{i: w\left(c_{i}\right) \leq n\right\}
$$

These functions satisfy some identities analogous to those in Definition 2.1.5:

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{n}^{\text {naive }}(x+y) & \geq \min \left\{v_{n}^{\text {naive }}(x), v_{n}^{\text {naive }}(y)\right\} & \left(x, y \in \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right], n \in \mathbb{Z}\right) \\
v_{n}^{\text {naive }}(x y) & \geq \min _{m \leq n}\left\{v_{m}^{\text {naive }}(x)+v_{n-m}^{\text {naive }}(y)\right\} & \left(x, y \in \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right], n \in \mathbb{Z}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Again, equality holds in each case if the minimum on the right side is achieved exactly once. Put

$$
v_{n, r}^{\text {naive }}(x)=r v_{n}^{\text {naive }}(x)+n
$$

For $r>0$, let $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ be the set of $x \in \Gamma$ such that $v_{n, r}^{\text {naive }}(x) \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Define the map $w_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ on $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ by

$$
w_{r}^{\text {naive }}(x)=\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}^{\text {naive }}(x)\right\} ;
$$

then $w_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ is a valuation on $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ by the same argument as in Lemma 2.1.7. Put

$$
\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {naive }}=\cup_{r>0} \Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }} .
$$

By the hypothesis on the Frobenius lift, we can choose $r>0$ such that $u^{\sigma} / u^{q}$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$.

Lemma 2.3.3. For $r>0$ such that $u^{\sigma} / u^{q}$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$, and $s \in(0, q r]$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s}^{\text {naive }}(x)\right\}=\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s / q}^{\text {naive }}\left(x^{\sigma}\right)\right\} \tag{2.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

for each $n \geq 0$ and each $x \in \Gamma$.
Proof. The hypothesis ensures that (2.3.4) holds for $x=u^{i}$ for any $i \in \mathbb{Z}$ and any $n$. For general $x$, write $x=\sum_{i} c_{i} u^{i}$; then on one hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s / q}^{\text {naive }}\left(x^{\sigma}\right)\right\} & \geq \min _{i \in \mathbb{Z}}\left\{\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s / q}^{\text {naive }}\left(c_{i}^{\sigma}\left(u^{\sigma}\right)^{i}\right)\right\}\right\} \\
& =\min _{i \in \mathbb{Z}}\left\{\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s}^{\text {naive }}\left(c_{i} u^{i}\right)\right\}\right\} \\
& =\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s}^{\text {naive }}(x)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand, if we take the smallest $j$ achieving the minimum on the left side of (2.3.4), then the minimum of $v_{j, s}^{\text {naive }}\left(c_{i} u^{i}\right)$ is achieved by a unique integer $i$. Hence the one inequality in the previous sequence is actually an equality.

Lemma 2.3.5. For $r>0$ such that $u^{\sigma} / u^{q}$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$, and $s \in(0, q r]$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s}(x)\right\}=\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s}^{\text {naive }}(x)\right\} \tag{2.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

for each $n \geq 0$ and each $x \in \Gamma$. In particular, $\Gamma_{s}^{\text {naive }}=\Gamma_{s}$, and $w_{s}(x)=$ $w_{s}^{\text {naive }}(x)$ for all $x \in \Gamma_{s}$.
Proof. Write $x=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty}\left[\overline{x_{i}}\right] \pi^{i}$ with each $\overline{x_{i}} \in K^{\text {perf }}$. Choose an integer $l$ such that ${\overline{x_{i}}}^{q^{l}} \in K$ for $i=0, \ldots, n$, and write ${\overline{x_{i}}}^{q^{l}}=\sum_{h \in \mathbb{Z}} \overline{c_{h i}} t^{h}$ with $\overline{c_{h i}} \in k$. Choose $c_{h i} \in \mathcal{O}$ lifting $\overline{c_{h i}}$, with $c_{h i}=0$ whenever $\overline{c_{h i}}=0$, and put $y_{i}=$ $\sum_{h} c_{h i} u^{h}$.
Pick an integer $m>n$, and define

$$
x^{\prime}=\sum_{i=0}^{n} y_{i}^{q^{m}}\left(\pi^{i}\right)^{\sigma^{l+m}} ;
$$

then $w\left(x^{\prime}-x^{\sigma^{l+m}}\right)>n$. Hence for $j \leq n, v_{j}\left(x^{\prime}\right)=v_{j}\left(x^{\sigma^{l+m}}\right)=q^{l+m} v_{j}(x)$ and $v_{j}^{\text {naive }}\left(x^{\prime}\right)=v_{j}^{\text {naive }}\left(x^{\sigma^{l+m}}\right)$.
From the way we chose the $y_{i}$, we have

$$
v_{j}^{\text {naive }}\left(y_{i}^{q^{m}}\left(\pi^{i}\right)^{\sigma^{l+m}}\right)=q^{l+m} v_{0}\left(\overline{x_{i}}\right) \quad(j \geq i)
$$

It follows that $v_{j}^{\text {naive }}\left(x^{\prime}\right)=q^{l+m} v_{j}(x)$ for $j \leq n$; that is, we have $v_{j}^{\text {naive }}\left(x^{\sigma^{l+m}}\right)=$ $q^{l+m} v_{j}(x)$ for $j \leq n$. In particular, we have

$$
\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s}(x)\right\}=\min _{j \leq n}\left\{v_{j, s / q^{l+m}}^{\text {naive }}\left(x^{\sigma^{l+m}}\right)\right\} .
$$

By Lemma 2.3.3, this yields the desired result. (Compare [19, Lemmas 3.6 and 3.7].)

Corollary 2.3.7. For $r>0$ such that $u^{\sigma} / u^{q}$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$, $\Gamma$ has enough qr-units, and $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}=\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\text {naive }}$.

REMARK 2.3.8. The ring $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is the ring of bounded rigid analytic functions on the annulus $|\pi|^{r} \leq|u|<1$, and the valuation $w_{s}^{\text {naive }}$ is the supremum norm on the circle $|u|=|\pi|^{s}$. This geometric interpretation motivates the subsequent constructions, and so is worth keeping in mind; indeed, much of the treatment of analytic rings in the rest of this chapter is modeled on the treatment of rings of functions on annuli given by Lazard [28], and our results generalize some of the results in [28] (given Remark 2.3.9 below).

REmark 2.3.9. In the context of this section, the ring $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ is what is usually called the Robba ring over $K$. The point of view of [19], maintained here, is that the Robba ring should always be viewed as coming with the "equipment" of a Frobenius lift $\sigma$; this seems to be the most convenient angle from which to approach $\sigma$-modules. However, when discussing a statement about $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$
that depends only on its underlying topological ring (e.g., the Bézout property, as in Theorem 2.9.6), one is free to use any Frobenius, and so it is sometimes convenient to use a "standard" Frobenius lift, under which $u^{\sigma}=u^{q}$ and $v_{n}^{\text {naive }}=$ $v_{n}$ for all $n$. In general, however, one cannot get away with only standard Frobenius lifts because the property of standardness is not preserved by passing to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$ for $L$ a finite separable extension of $k((t))$.

Remark 2.3.10. It would be desirable to be able to have it possible for $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ to be the ring of rigid analytic functions on an annulus over a $p$-adic field whose valuation is not discrete (e.g., the completed algebraic closure $\mathbb{C}_{p}$ of $\mathbb{Q}_{p}$ ), since the results of Lazard we are analogizing hold in that context. However, this seems rather difficult to accommodate in the formalism developed above; for instance, the $v_{n}$ cannot be described in terms of Teichmüller elements, so an axiomatic characterization is probably needed. There are additional roadblocks later in the story; we will flag some of these as we go along.

REmARK 2.3.11. One can carry out an analogous comparison between naïve and true partial valuations when $K$ is the completion of $k\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ for a "monomial" valuation, in which $v\left(x_{1}\right), \ldots, v\left(x_{n}\right)$ are linearly independent over $\mathbb{Q}$; this gives additional examples in which the hypothesis " $\Gamma$ has enough units" can be checked, and hence additional examples in which the framework of this paper applies. See [25] for details.

### 2.4 Analytic Rings

We now proceed roughly as in [19, Section 3.3]; however, we will postpone certain "reality checks" on the definitions until the next section.

Convention 2.4.1. Throughout this section, and for the rest of the chapter, assume that the field $K$ is complete with respect to the valuation $v_{K}$, and that $\Gamma^{K}$ has enough $r_{0}$-units for some fixed $r_{0}>0$. Note that the assumption that $K$ is complete ensures that $\Gamma_{r}$ is complete under $w_{r}$ for any $r \in\left[0, r_{0}\right)$.

Definition 2.4.2. Let $I$ be a subinterval of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$, i.e., $I \subseteq[0, r]$ for some $r<r_{0}$. Let $\Gamma_{I}$ be the Fréchet completion of $\Gamma_{r_{0}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ for the valuations $w_{s}$ for $s \in I$; note that the functions $v_{n}, v_{n, s}, w_{s}$ extend to $\Gamma_{I}$ by continuity, and that $\sigma$ extends to a map $\sigma: \Gamma_{I} \rightarrow \Gamma_{q^{-1} I}$. For $I \subseteq J$ subintervals of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from 0 , we have a natural map $\Gamma_{J} \rightarrow \Gamma_{I}$; this map is injective with dense image. For $I=[0, s]$, note that $\Gamma_{I}=\Gamma_{s}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. For $I=(0, s]$, we write $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, s}$ for $\Gamma_{I}$.

Remark 2.4.3. In the context of Section 2.3, $\Gamma_{I}$ is the ring of rigid analytic functions on the subspace of the open unit disc defined by the condition $\log _{|\pi|}|u| \in I$; compare Remark 2.3.8.
Definition 2.4.4. For $I$ a subinterval of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$, and for $x \in \Gamma_{I}$ nonzero, define the Newton polygon of $x$ to be the lower convex
hull of the set of points $\left(v_{n}(x), n\right)$, minus any segment the negative of whose slope is not in $I$. Define the slopes of $x$ to be the negations of the slopes of the Newton polygon of $x$. Define the multiplicity of $s \in(0, r]$ as a slope of $x$ to be the difference in vertical coordinates between the endpoints of the segment of the Newton polygon of $x$ of slope $-s$, or 0 if no such segment exists. If $x$ has only finitely many slopes, define the total multiplicity of $x$ to be the sum of the multiplicities of all slopes of $x$. If $x$ has only one slope, we say $x$ is pure of that slope.

REMARK 2.4.5. The analogous definition of total multiplicity for $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ counts the total number of zeroes (with multiplicities) that a function has in the annulus $|\pi|^{r} \leq|u|<1$.

Remark 2.4.6. Note that the multiplicity of any given slope is always finite. More generally, for any closed subinterval $I=\left[r^{\prime}, r\right]$ of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$, the total multiplicity of any $x \in \Gamma_{I}$ is finite. Explicitly, the total multiplicity equals $i-j$, where $i$ is the largest $n$ achieving $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)\right\}$ and $j$ is the smallest $n$ achieving $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}(x)\right\}$. In particular, if $x \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$, the slopes of $x$ form a sequence decreasing to zero.

Lemma 2.4.7. For $x, y \in \Gamma_{I}$ nonzero, the multiplicity of each $s \in I$ as a slope of $x y$ is the sum of the multiplicities of $s$ as a slope of $x$ and of $y$. In particular, $\Gamma_{I}$ is an integral domain.

Proof. For $x, y \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, this follows at once from Lemma 2.1.7. In the general case, note that the conclusion of Lemma 2.1.7 still holds, by approximating $x$ and $y$ suitably well by elements of $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

Definition 2.4.8. Let $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}$ be the union of the $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}^{K}$ over all $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$; this ring is an integral domain by Lemma 2.4.7. Remember that we are allowing $v_{K}$ to be trivial, in which case $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}=\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]=\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

Example 2.4.9. In the context of Section 2.3, the ring $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ consists of formal Laurent series $\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} c_{n} u^{n}$ with each $c_{n} \in \mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right], \liminf _{n \rightarrow-\infty} w\left(c_{n}\right) /(-n)>$ 0 , and $\lim \inf _{n \rightarrow \infty} w\left(c_{n}\right) / n \geq 0$. The latter is none other than the Robba ring over $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

We make a few observations about finite extensions of $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$.
Proposition 2.4.10. Let $L$ be a finite separable extension of $K$. Then the multiplication map

$$
\mu: \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K} \otimes_{\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{K}} \Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{L} \rightarrow \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}
$$

is an isomorphism. More precisely, for any $x \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{L}$ such that $\bar{x}$ generates $L$ over $K$, we have $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L} \cong \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}[x] /(P(x))$.

Proof. For $s>0$ sufficiently small, we have $\Gamma_{s}^{L} \cong \Gamma_{s}^{K}[x] /(P(x))$ by Lemma 2.1.12, from which the claim follows.

Corollary 2.4.11. Let $L$ be a finite Galois extension of $K$. Then the fixed subring of $\operatorname{Frac} \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$ under the action of $G=\operatorname{Gal}(L / K)$ is equal to $\operatorname{Frac} \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}$.

Proof. By Proposition 2.4.10, the fixed subring of $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{L}$ under the action of $G$ is equal to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}$. Given $x / y \in \operatorname{Frac} \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$ fixed under $G$, put $x^{\prime}=\prod_{g \in G} x^{g}$; since $x^{\prime}$ is $G$-invariant, we have $x^{\prime} \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{K}$. Put $y^{\prime}=x^{\prime} y / x \in \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}^{L}$; then $x^{\prime} / y^{\prime}=x / y$, and both $x^{\prime}$ and $x^{\prime} / y^{\prime}$ are $G$-invariant, so $y^{\prime}$ is as well. Thus $x / y \in \operatorname{Frac} \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}$, as desired.

Lemma 2.4.12. Let $I$ be a subinterval of $\left(0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$. Then the union $\cup \Gamma_{I}^{L}$, taken over all pseudo-finite separable extensions $L$ of $K$, is dense in $\Gamma_{I}^{\mathrm{alg}}$.

Proof. Let $M$ be the algebraic closure (not completed) of $K$. Then $\cup \Gamma^{L}$ is clearly dense in $\Gamma^{M}$ for the $p$-adic topology. By Remark 2.2.11 and Lemma 2.2.12, the set of pseudo-finite separable extensions $L$ such that $\Gamma^{L}$ has enough $r_{0}$-units is cofinal. Hence the set $U$ of $x \in \cup \Gamma_{r_{0}}^{L}$ with $w_{r_{0}}(x) \geq 0$ is dense in the set $V$ of $x \in \Gamma_{r_{0}}^{M}$ with $w_{r_{0}}(x) \geq 0$ for the $p$-adic topology. On these sets, the topology induced on $U$ or $V$ by any one $w_{s}$ with $s \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$ is coarser than the $p$-adic topology. Thus $U$ is also dense in $V$ for the Fréchet topology induced by the $w_{s}$ for $s \in I$. It follows that $\cup \Gamma_{I}^{L}$ is dense in $\Gamma_{I}^{M}$; however, the condition that $0 \notin I$ ensures that $\Gamma_{I}^{M}=\Gamma_{I}^{\mathrm{alg}}$, so we have the desired result.

Remark 2.4.13. Recall that in [19] (contrary to our present Convention 2.2.16), the residue field of $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}$ is the algebraic closure of $K$, rather than the completion thereof. However, the definition of $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$ comes out the same, and our convention here makes a few statements a bit easier to make. For instance, in the notation of [19], an element $x$ of $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}^{\text {alg }}$ can satisfy $v_{n}(x)=\infty$ for all $n<0$ without belonging to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$. (Thanks to Francesco Baldassarri for suggesting this change.)

### 2.5 Reality checks

Before proceeding further, we must make some tedious but necessary "reality checks" concerning the analytic rings. This is most easily done for $K$ perfect, where elements of $\Gamma_{I}$ have canonical decompositions (related to the "strong semiunit decompositions" of [19, Proposition 3.14].)

Definition 2.5.1. For $K$ perfect, define the functions $f_{n}: \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \rightarrow K$ for $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ by the formula $x=\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\left[f_{n}(x)\right] \pi^{n}$, where the brackets again denote Teichmüller lifts. Then

$$
v_{n}(x)=\min _{m \leq n}\left\{v_{K}\left(f_{m}(x)\right)\right\} \leq v_{K}\left(f_{n}(x)\right),
$$

which implies that $f_{n}$ extends uniquely to a continuous function $f_{n}: \Gamma_{I} \rightarrow K$ for any subinterval $I \subseteq[0, \infty)$, and that the sum $\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\left[f_{n}(x)\right] \pi^{n}$ converges to
$x$ in $\Gamma_{I}$. We call this sum the Teichmüller presentation of $x$. Let $x_{+}, x_{-}, x_{0}$ be the sums of $\left[f_{n}(x)\right] \pi^{n}$ over those $n$ for which $v_{K}\left(f_{n}(x)\right)$ is positive, negative, or zero; we call the presentation $x=x_{+}+x_{-}+x_{0}$ the plus-minus-zero presentation of $x$.

From the existence of Teichm̈uller presentations, it is obvious that for instance, if $x \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ satisfies $v_{n}(x)=\infty$ for all $n<0$, then $x \in \Gamma_{r}$. In order to make such statements evident in case $K$ is not perfect, we need an approximation of the same technique.

Definition 2.5.2. Define a semiunit to be an element of $\Gamma_{r_{0}}$ which is either zero or a unit. For $I \subseteq\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$ and $x \in \Gamma_{I}$, a semiunit presentation of $x\left(\right.$ over $\left.\Gamma_{I}\right)$ is a convergent $\operatorname{sum} x=\sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} u_{i} \pi^{i}$, in which each $u_{i}$ is a semiunit.

Lemma 2.5.3. Suppose that $u_{0}, u_{1}, \ldots$ are semiunits.
(a) For each $i \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$,

$$
w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) \geq \min _{n \leq i}\left\{v_{n, r}\left(\sum_{j=0}^{i} u_{j} \pi^{j}\right)\right\}
$$

(b) Suppose that $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ converges $\pi$-adically to some $x$ such that for some $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right), v_{n, r}(x) \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Then $w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) \rightarrow \infty$ as $i \rightarrow \infty$, so that $\sum_{i} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ is a semiunit presentation of $x$ over $\Gamma_{r}$.

Proof. (a) The inequality is evident for $i=0$; we prove the general claim by induction on $i$. If $w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) \geq w_{r}\left(u_{j} \pi^{j}\right)$ for some $j<i$, then the induction hypothesis yields the claim. Otherwise, $w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right)<w_{r}\left(\sum_{j<i} u_{j} \pi^{j}\right)$, so $v_{n, r}\left(\sum_{j=0}^{i} u_{j} \pi^{j}\right)=v_{n, r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right)$, again yielding the claim.
(b) Choose $r^{\prime} \in\left(r, r_{0}\right)$; we can then apply (a) to deduce that

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{r^{\prime}}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) & \geq \min _{n \leq i}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}(x)\right\} \\
& =\min _{n \leq i}\left\{\left(r^{\prime} / r\right) v_{n, r}(x)+\left(1-r^{\prime} / r\right) n\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) & \geq \min _{n \leq i}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)+\left(r / r^{\prime}-1\right) n\right\}+\left(1-r / r^{\prime}\right) i \\
& =\min _{n \leq i}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)+\left(1-r / r^{\prime}\right)(i-n)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $v_{n, r}(x) \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, the right side tends to $\infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

Lemma 2.5.4. Given a subinterval I of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$, and $r \in I$, suppose that $x \in \Gamma_{[r, r]}$ has the property that for any $s \in I, v_{n, s}(x) \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \pm \infty$. Suppose also that $\sum_{i} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ is a semiunit presentation of $x$ over $\Gamma_{[r, r]}$. Then $\sum_{i} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ converges in $\Gamma_{I}$; in particular, $x \in \Gamma_{I}$.

Proof. By applying Lemma 2.5.3(a) to $\sum_{i=-N}^{N} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ and using continuity, we deduce that $w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) \geq \min _{n \leq i}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)\right\}$. For $s \in I$ with $s \geq r$, we have $w_{s}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) \geq(s / r) w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right)+(s / r-1)(-i)$, so $w_{s}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) \rightarrow \infty$ as $i \rightarrow-\infty$. On the other hand, for $s \in I$ with $s<r$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{s}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) & =(s / r) w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right)+(1-s / r) i \\
& \geq(s / r) \min _{n \leq i}\left\{v_{n, r}(x)\right\}+(1-s / r) i \\
& =(s / r) \min _{n \leq i}\left\{(r / s) v_{n, s}(x)+(1-r / s) n\right\}+(1-s / r) i \\
& =\min _{n \leq i}\left\{v_{n, s}(x)+(s / r-1)(n-i)\right\} \\
& \geq \min _{n \leq i}\left\{v_{n, s}(x)\right\} ;
\end{aligned}
$$

by the hypothesis that $v_{n, s}(x) \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \pm \infty$, we have $w_{s}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right) \rightarrow \infty$ as $i \rightarrow-\infty$ also in this case.
We conclude that $\sum_{i<0} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ converges in $\Gamma_{I}$; put $y=x-\sum_{i<0} u_{i} \pi^{i}$. Then $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ converges to $y$ under $w_{r}$, hence also $\pi$-adically. By Lemma 2.5.3(b), $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty=0} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ converges in $\Gamma_{r}$, so we have $x \in \Gamma_{I}$, as desired.

One then has the following variant of [19, Proposition 3.14].
Proposition 2.5.5. For I a subinterval of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$, every $x \in \Gamma_{I}$ admits a semiunit presentation.

Proof. We first verify that for $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$, every element of $\Gamma_{r}$ admits a semiunit presentation. Given $x \in \Gamma_{r}$, we can construct a sum $\sum_{i} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ converging $\pi$-adically to $x$, in which each $u_{i}$ is a semiunit. By Lemma 2.5.3(b), this sum actually converges under $w_{s}$ for each $s \in[0, r]$, hence yields a semiunit presentation.
We now proceed to the general case; by Lemma 2.5.4, it is enough to treat the case $I=[r, r]$. Choose a sum $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} x_{i}$ converging to $x$ in $\Gamma_{[r, r]}$, with each $x_{i} \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. We define elements $y_{i l} \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ for $i \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $l \geq 0$, such that for each $l$, there are only finitely many $i$ with $y_{i l} \neq 0$, as follows. By the vanishing condition on the $y_{i l}, x_{0}+\cdots+x_{l}-\sum_{j<l} \sum_{i} y_{i j} \pi^{i}$ belongs to $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ and so admits a semiunit presentation $\sum_{i} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ by virtue of the previous paragraph. For each $i$ with $w_{r}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right)<w_{r}\left(x_{l+1}\right)$ (of which there are only finitely many), put $y_{i l}=u_{i}$; for all other $i$, put $y_{i l}=0$. Then

$$
w_{r}\left(x_{0}+\cdots+x_{l}-\sum_{j \leq l} \sum_{i} y_{i j} \pi^{i}\right) \geq w_{r}\left(x_{l+1}\right)
$$

In particular, the doubly infinite sum $\sum_{i, l} y_{i l} \pi^{i}$ converges to $x$ under $w_{r}$. If we set $z_{i}=\sum_{l} y_{i l}$, then the sum $\sum_{i} z_{i} \pi^{i}$ converges to $x$ under $w_{r}$.
Note that whenever $y_{i l} \neq 0, w_{r}\left(x_{l}\right) \leq w_{r}\left(y_{i l} \pi^{i}\right)$ by Lemma 2.5.3, whereas $w_{r}\left(y_{i l} \pi^{i}\right)<w_{r}\left(x_{l+1}\right)$ by construction. Thus for any fixed $i$, the values of $w_{r}\left(y_{i l} \pi^{i}\right)$, taken over all $l$ such that $y_{i l} \neq 0$, form a strictly increasing sequence. Since each such $y_{i l}$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{r_{0}}$, we have $w_{r_{0}}\left(y_{i l} \pi^{i}\right)=\left(r_{0} / r\right) w_{r}\left(y_{i l} \pi^{i}\right)+$ ( $\left.1-r_{0} / r\right) i$; hence the values of $w_{r_{0}}\left(y_{i l} \pi^{i}\right)$ also form an increasing sequence. Consequently, the sum $\sum_{l} y_{i l}$ converges in $\Gamma_{r_{0}}$ (not just under $w_{r}$ ) and its limit $z_{i}$ is a semiunit. Thus $\sum_{i} z_{i} \pi^{i}$ is a semiunit presentation of $x$ over $\Gamma_{[r, r]}$, as desired.

Corollary 2.5.6. For $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$ and $x \in \Gamma_{[r, r]}$, we have $x \in \Gamma_{r}$ if and only if $v_{n}(x)=\infty$ for all $n<0$.

Proof. If $x \in \Gamma_{r}$, then $v_{n}(x)=\infty$ for all $n<0$. Conversely, suppose that $v_{n}(x)=\infty$ for all $n<0$. Apply Proposition 2.5.5 to produce a semiunit presentation $x=\sum_{i} u_{i} \pi^{i}$. Suppose there exists $j<0$ such that $u_{j} \neq 0$; pick such a $j$ minimizing $w_{r}\left(u_{j} \pi^{j}\right)$. Then $v_{j, n}(x)=w_{r}\left(u_{j} \pi^{j}\right) \neq \infty$, contrary to assumption. Hence $u_{j}=0$ for $j<0$, and so $x=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} u_{i} \pi^{i} \in \Gamma_{r}$.

Corollary 2.5.7. Let $I \subseteq J$ be subintervals of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$. Suppose $x \in \Gamma_{I}$ has the property that for each $s \in J, v_{n, s}(x) \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \pm \infty$. Then $x \in \Gamma_{J}$.

Proof. Produce a semiunit presentation of $x$ over $\Gamma_{J}$ using Proposition 2.5.5, then apply Lemma 2.5.4.

The numerical criterion provided by Corollary 2.5.7 in turn implies a number of results that are evident in the case of $K$ perfect (using Teichmüller presentations).

Corollary 2.5.8. For $K \subseteq K^{\prime}$ an extension of complete fields such that $\Gamma^{K}$ and $\Gamma^{K^{\prime}}$ have enough $r_{0}$-units, and $I \subseteq J \subseteq\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$, we have

$$
\Gamma_{I}^{K} \cap \Gamma_{J}^{K^{\prime}}=\Gamma_{J}^{K}
$$

Corollary 2.5.9. Let $I=[a, b]$ and $J=[c, d]$ be subintervals of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$ with $a \leq c \leq b \leq d$. Then the intersection of $\Gamma_{I}$ and $\Gamma_{J}$ within $\Gamma_{I \cap J}$ is equal to $\Gamma_{I \cup J}$. Moreover, any $x \in \Gamma_{I \cap J}$ with $w_{s}(x)>0$ for $s \in I \cap J$ can be written as $y+z$ with $y \in \Gamma_{I}, z \in \Gamma_{J}$, and

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
w_{s}(y) & \geq(s / c) w_{c}(x) & (s \in[a, c]) \\
w_{s}(z) & \geq(s / b) w_{b}(x) & (s \in[b, d]) \\
\min \left\{w_{s}(y), w_{s}(z)\right\} & \geq w_{s}(x) \quad(s \in[c, b]) .
\end{array}
$$

Proof. The first assertion follows from Corollary 2.5.7. For the second assertion, apply Proposition 2.5.5 to obtain a semiunit presentation $x=\sum u_{i} \pi^{i}$. Put $y=\sum_{i \leq 0} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ and $z=\sum_{i>0} u_{i} \pi^{i}$; these satisfy the claimed inequalities.

Remark 2.5.10. The notion of a semiunit presentation is similar to that of a "semiunit decomposition" as in [19], but somewhat less intricate. In any case, we will have only limited direct use for semiunit presentations; we will mostly exploit them indirectly, via their role in proving Lemma 2.5.11 below.

Lemma 2.5.11. Let $I$ be a closed subinterval of $[0, r]$ for some $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$, and suppose $x \in \Gamma_{I}$. Then there exists $y \in \Gamma_{r}$ such that

$$
w_{s}(x-y) \geq \min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, s}(x)\right\} \quad(s \in I)
$$

Proof. Apply Proposition 2.5 .5 to produce a semiunit presentation $\sum_{i} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ of $x$. Then we can choose $m>0$ such that $w_{s}\left(u_{i} \pi^{i}\right)>\min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, s}(x)\right\}$ for $s \in I$ and $i>m$. Put $y=\sum_{i=0}^{m} u_{i} \pi^{i}$; then the desired inequality follows from Lemma 2.5.3(a).

Corollary 2.5.12. A nonzero element $x$ of $\Gamma_{I}$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{I}$ if and only if it has no slopes; if $I=(0, r]$, this happens if and only if $x$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

Proof. If $x$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{I}$, it has no slopes by Lemma 2.4.7. Conversely, suppose that $x$ has no slopes; then there exists a single $m$ which minimizes $v_{m, s}(x)$ for all $s \in I$. Without loss of generality we may assume that $m=0$; we may then apply Lemma 2.5.11 to produce $y \in \Gamma_{r}$ such that $w_{s}(x-y) \geq \min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, s}(x)\right\}$ for all $s \in I$. Since $\Gamma$ has enough $r$-units, we can choose a unit $z \in \Gamma_{r}$ such that $w(y-z)>0$; then $w_{s}\left(1-x z^{-1}\right)>0$ for all $s \in I$. Hence the series $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty}\left(1-x z^{-1}\right)^{i}$ converges in $\Gamma_{I}$, and its limit $u$ satisfies $u x z^{-1}=1$. This proves that $x$ is a unit.
In case $I=(0, r], x$ has no slopes if and only if there is a unique $m$ which minimizes $v_{m, s}(x)$ for all $s \in(0, r]$; this is only possible if $v_{n}(x)=\infty$ for $n<m$. By Corollary 2.5.6, this implies $x \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; by the same argument, $x^{-1} \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

### 2.6 Principality

In Remark 2.3.8, the annulus of which $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ is the rigid of rigid analytic functions is affinoid (in the sense of Berkovich in case the endpoints are not rational) and one-dimensional, and so $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {naive }}$ is a principal ideal domain. This can be established more generally.
Before proceeding further, we mention a useful "positioning lemma", which is analogous to but not identical with [19, Lemma 3.24].

Lemma 2.6.1. For $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$ and $x \in \Gamma_{[r, r]}$ nonzero, there exists a unit $u \in \Gamma_{r_{0}}$ and an integer $i$ such that, if we write $y=u \pi^{i} x$, then:
(a) $w_{r}(y)=0$;
(b) $v_{0}(y-1)>0$;
(c) $v_{n, r}(y)>0$ for $n<0$.

Proof. Define $i$ to be the largest integer minimizing $v_{-i, r}(x)$. Apply Lemma 2.5.11 to find $z \in \Gamma_{r}$ such that $w_{r}\left(\pi^{i} x-z\right) \geq \min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, r}\left(\pi^{i} x\right)\right\}$. Since $\Gamma$ has enough $r_{0}$-units, we can choose a unit $u$ of $\Gamma_{r_{0}}$ such that $u^{-1} \equiv z$ $(\bmod \pi)$; then $u$ and $i$ have the desired properties.

Definition 2.6.2. For $x \in \Gamma_{r}$ nonzero, define the height of $x$ as the largest $n$ such that $w_{r}(x)=v_{n, r}(x)$; it can also be described as the $p$-adic valuation of $x$ plus the total multiplicity of $x$. By convention, we say 0 has height $-\infty$.
Lemma 2.6.3 (Division algorithm). For $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$ and $x, y \in \Gamma_{r}$ with $x$ nonzero, there exists $z \in \Gamma_{r}$ such that $y-z$ is divisible by $x$, and $z$ has height less than that of $x$. Moreover, we can ensure that $w_{r}(z) \geq w_{r}(y)$.
Proof. Let $m$ be the height of $x$. Apply Proposition 2.5.5 to choose a semiunit presentation $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} u_{i} \pi^{i}$ of $x$, and put $x^{\prime}=x-\sum_{i=0}^{m-1} u_{i} \pi^{i}$; then $x^{\prime} \pi^{-m}$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{r}$, and by Lemma 2.5.3,

$$
w_{r}\left(x-x^{\prime}\right) \geq w_{r}(x)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right) .
$$

Define a sequence $\left\{y_{l}\right\}_{l=0}^{\infty}$ as follows. Put $y_{0}=y$. Given $y_{l}$ with $y_{l}-y$ divisible by $x$ and $w_{r}\left(y_{l}\right) \geq w_{r}(y)$, if $y_{l}$ has height less than $m$, we may take $z=y_{l}$ and be done with the proof of the lemma. So we may assume that $y_{l}$ has height at least $m$, which means that $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}\left(y_{l}\right)\right\}$ is achieved by at least one $n \geq m$. Pick $y_{l}^{\prime} \in \Gamma_{r_{0}}$ with $w_{r}\left(y_{l}^{\prime}-y_{l}\right) \geq w_{r}\left(y_{l}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right)$, and apply Lemma 2.5.11 to $y_{l}^{\prime} \pi^{-m}$ to produce $z_{l} \in \Gamma_{r_{0}}$ such that $w_{r_{0}}\left(z_{l}-y_{l}^{\prime} \pi^{-m}\right) \geq \min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, r_{0}}\left(y_{l}^{\prime} \pi^{-m}\right)\right\}$. Put

$$
\begin{aligned}
y_{l+1} & =y_{l}-z_{l}\left(\pi^{m} / x^{\prime}\right) x \\
& =\left(y_{l}-y_{l}^{\prime}\right)+\left(y_{l}^{\prime}-z_{l} \pi^{m}\right)+z_{l} \pi^{m}\left(1-x^{\prime} / x\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By construction, we have $w_{r}\left(y_{l}-y_{l}^{\prime}\right) \geq w_{r}\left(y_{l}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right)$ and $w_{r}\left(z_{l} \pi^{m}(1-\right.$ $\left.\left.x^{\prime} / x\right)\right) \geq w_{r}\left(y_{l}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right)$. Moreover, for $n \geq m$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{n, r}\left(y_{l}^{\prime}-z_{l} \pi^{m}\right) & =\left(r / r_{0}\right) v_{n, r_{0}}\left(y_{l}^{\prime}-z_{l} \pi^{m}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right) n \\
& \geq\left(r / r_{0}\right) w_{r_{0}}\left(y_{l}^{\prime}-z_{l} \pi^{m}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right) m \\
& \geq\left(r / r_{0}\right) \min _{j<m}\left\{v_{j, r_{0}}\left(y_{l}^{\prime}\right)\right\}+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right) m \\
& =\min _{j<m}\left\{v_{j, r}\left(y_{l}^{\prime}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right)(m-j)\right\} \\
& \geq \min _{j<m}\left\{v_{j, r}\left(y_{l}^{\prime}\right)\right\}+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right) \\
& \geq w_{r}\left(y_{l}^{\prime}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right)=w_{r}\left(y_{l}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows that for $n \geq m$, we have $v_{n, r}\left(y_{l+1}\right) \geq w_{r}\left(y_{l}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right)$. We may assume that $y_{l+1}$ also has height at least $m$, in which case $w_{r}\left(y_{l+1}\right) \geq$ $w_{r}\left(y_{l}\right)+\left(1-r / r_{0}\right)$. Hence (unless the process stops at some finite $l$, in which case we already know that we win) the $y_{l}$ converge to zero under $w_{r}$, and

$$
y=x \sum_{l=0}^{\infty}\left(y_{l}-y_{l+1}\right) / x \in \Gamma_{r}
$$

is divisible by $x$, so we may take $z=0$.
Remark 2.6.4. Note how we used the fact that $\Gamma^{K}$ has enough $r_{0}$-units, not just enough $r$-units. Also, note that the discreteness of the valuation on $K$ was essential to ensuring that the sequence $\left\{y_{l}\right\}$ converges to zero.

This division algorithm has the usual consequence.
Proposition 2.6.5. For $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right), \Gamma_{r}$ is a principal ideal domain.
Proof. Let $J$ be a nonzero ideal of $\Gamma_{r}$, and pick $x \in J$ of minimal height. Then for any $y \in J$, apply Lemma 2.6.3 to produce $z$ of height less than $x$ with $y-z$ divisible by $x$. Then $z \in J$, so we must have $z=0$ by the minimality in the choice of $x$. In other words, every $y \in J$ is divisible by $x$, as claimed.

Remark 2.6.6. Here is one of the roadblocks mentioned in Remark 2.3.10: if $\mathcal{O}$ is not discretely valued, then it is not even a PID itself, so the analogue of $\Gamma_{r}$ cannot be one either.

To extend Proposition 2.6 .5 to more $\Gamma_{I}$, we use the following factorization lemma (compare [19, Lemma 3.25]). We will refine this lemma a bit later; see Lemma 2.9.1.

Lemma 2.6.7. For $I=\left[r^{\prime}, r\right] \subseteq\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ and $x \in \Gamma_{I}$, there exists a unit $u$ of $\Gamma_{I}$ such that $u x \in \Gamma_{r}$, and all of the slopes of $u x$ in $[0, r]$ belong to $I$.

Proof. By applying Lemma 2.6.1, we may reduce to the case where $w_{r^{\prime}}(x)=0$, $v_{0}(x-1)>0$, and $v_{n, r^{\prime}}(x)>0$ for $n<0$; then for $n<0$, we must have $v_{n}(x)>0$ and so $v_{n, s}(x)>0$ for all $s \in I$. Put

$$
c=\min _{s \in I}\left\{\min _{n \leq 0}\left\{v_{n, s}(x-1)\right\}\right\}>0
$$

Define the sequence $u_{0}, u_{1}, \ldots$ of units of $\Gamma_{I}$ as follows. First set $u_{0}=1$. Given $u_{l}$ such that $\min _{n \leq 0}\left\{v_{n, s}\left(u_{l} x-1\right)\right\} \geq c$ for all $s \in I$, apply Lemma 2.5.11 to produce $y_{l} \in \Gamma_{r}$ such that $w_{s}\left(y_{l}-u_{l} x\right) \geq \min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, s}\left(u_{l} x\right)\right\}$ for all $s \in I$. We may thus take $u_{l+1}=u_{l}\left(1-y_{l}+u_{l} x\right)$, because $w_{s}\left(y_{l}-u_{l} x\right) \geq c$; moreover, for $n<0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(u_{l+1} x\right) & =v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(y_{l}-u_{l+1} x\right) \\
& =v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(\left(y_{l}-u_{l} x\right)\left(1-u_{l} x\right)\right) \\
& \geq \min _{m}\left\{v_{m, r^{\prime}}\left(y_{l}-u_{l} x\right)+v_{n-m, r^{\prime}}\left(1-u_{l} x\right)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

This last minimum is at least $\min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(u_{l} x\right)\right\}$. Moreover, if it is ever less than $\min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(u_{l} x\right)\right\}+c$, then the smallest value of $n$ achieving $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(u_{l+1} x\right)\right\}$ is strictly greater than the smallest value of $n$ achieving $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(u_{l} x\right)\right\}$ (since in that case, terms in the last minimum above with $m \leq 0$ cannot affect the minimum of the left side over all $n<0$ ).

In other words, for every $l$, there exists $l^{\prime}>l$ such that

$$
\min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(u_{l^{\prime}} x\right)\right\} \geq \min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}\left(u_{l} x\right)\right\}+c .
$$

Hence in case $s=r^{\prime}$, we have $\min _{n<0}\left\{v_{n, s}\left(u_{l} x\right)\right\} \rightarrow \infty$ as $l \rightarrow \infty$; consequently, the same also holds for $s \in I$. It follows that the sequence $\left\{u_{l}\right\}$ converges to a limit $u \in \Gamma_{I}$, and that $v_{n, s}(u x)=\infty$ for $n<0$, so that $u x \in \Gamma_{r}$ by Corollary 2.5.6. Moreover, by construction, $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r^{\prime}}(u x)\right\}$ is achieved by $n=0$, so all of the slopes of $u x$ are at least $r^{\prime}$.

Proposition 2.6.8. Let $I$ be a closed subinterval of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$. Then $\Gamma_{I}$ is a principal ideal domain.

Proof. Put $I=\left[r^{\prime}, r\right]$, and let $J$ be a nonzero ideal of $\Gamma_{I}$. By Lemma 2.6.7, each element $x$ of $J$ can be written (nonuniquely) as a unit $u$ of $\Gamma_{I}$ times an element $y$ of $\Gamma_{r}$. Let $J^{\prime}$ be the ideal of $\Gamma_{r}$ generated by all such $y$; by Proposition 2.6.8, $J^{\prime}$ is principal, generated by some $z$. Since $J^{\prime} \subseteq J \cap \Gamma_{r}$, we have $z \in J$; on the other hand, each $x \in J$ has the form $u y$ with $u \in \Gamma_{I}$ and $y \in \Gamma_{r}$, and $y$ is a multiple of $z$ in $\Gamma_{r}$, so $x$ is a multiple of $z$ in $\Gamma_{I}$. Hence $z$ generates $J$, as desired.

Remark 2.6.9. Proposition 2.6.8 generalizes Lazard's [28, Corollaire de Proposition 4].

### 2.7 Matrix approximations and factorizations

We need a matrix approximation lemma similar to [19, Lemma 6.2]; it is in some sense a matricial analogue of Lemma 2.6.1.

Lemma 2.7.1. Let $I$ be a closed subinterval of $[0, r]$ for some $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$, and let $M$ be an invertible $n \times n$ matrix over $\Gamma_{I}$. Then there exists an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $U$ over $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ such that $w_{s}\left(M U-I_{n}\right)>0$ for $s \in I$. Moreover, if $w_{s}(\operatorname{det}(M)-1)>0$, we can ensure that $\operatorname{det}(U)=1$.

Proof. By applying Lemma 2.6 .1 to $\operatorname{det}(M)$ (and then multiplying a single row of $U$ by the resulting unit), we can ensure that $w_{s}(\operatorname{det}(M)-1)>0$ for $s \in I$. With this extra hypothesis, we proceed by induction on $n$.
Let $C_{i}$ denote the cofactor of $M_{n i}$ in $M$, so that $\operatorname{det}(M)=\sum_{i=1}^{n} C_{i} M_{n i}$, and in fact $C_{i}=\left(M^{-1}\right)_{i n} \operatorname{det}(M)$. Put $\alpha_{i}=\operatorname{det}(M)^{-1} M_{n i}$, so that $\sum_{i=1}^{n} \alpha_{i} C_{i}=1$. Choose $\beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{n-1}, \beta_{n}^{\prime} \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ such that for $s \in I$ and $i=1, \ldots, n-1$,

$$
w_{s}\left(\beta_{i}-\alpha_{i}\right)>-w_{s}\left(C_{i}\right) \quad w_{s}\left(\beta_{n}^{\prime}-\alpha_{n}\right)>-w_{s}\left(C_{n}\right)
$$

Note that for $c \in \mathcal{O}$ with $w(c)$ sufficiently large, $\beta_{n}=\beta_{n}^{\prime}+c$ satisfies $w_{s}\left(\beta_{n}-\right.$ $\left.\alpha_{n}\right)>-w_{s}\left(C_{n}\right)$ for $s \in I$. Moreover, by Proposition 2.6.8, we can find $\gamma \in$ $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ generating the ideal generated by $\beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{n-1}$; then the $\beta_{n}^{\prime}+c$ are pairwise coprime for different $c \in \mathcal{O}$, so only finitely many of them can have
a nontrivial common factor with $\gamma$. In particular, for $w(c)$ sufficiently large, $\beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{n}$ generate the unit ideal in $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.
With $\beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{n}$ so chosen, we can choose a matrix $A$ over $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ of determinant 1 such that $A_{n i}=\beta_{i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, n$ (because $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is a PID, again by Proposition 2.6.8). Put $M^{\prime}=M A^{-1}$, and let $C_{n}^{\prime}$ be the cofactor of $M_{n n}^{\prime}$ in $M^{\prime}$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
C_{n}^{\prime} & =\left(A M^{-1}\right)_{n n} \operatorname{det}(M) \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{n} A_{n i}\left(M^{-1}\right)_{i n} \operatorname{det}(M)=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \beta_{i} C_{i},
\end{aligned}
$$

so that

$$
C_{n}^{\prime}=1+\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\beta_{i}-\alpha_{i}\right) C_{i}
$$

and so $w_{s}\left(C_{n}^{\prime}-1\right)>0$ for $s \in I$. In particular, $C_{n}^{\prime}$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{I}$.
Apply the induction hypothesis to the upper left $(n-1) \times(n-1)$ submatrix of $M^{\prime}$, and extend the resulting $(n-1) \times(n-1)$ matrix $V$ to an $n \times n$ matrix by setting $V_{n i}=V_{i n}=0$ for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$ and $V_{n n}=1$. Then we have $\operatorname{det}\left(M^{\prime} V\right)=\operatorname{det}(M)$, so $w_{s}\left(\operatorname{det}\left(M^{\prime} V\right)-1\right)>0$ for $s \in I$, and

$$
w_{s}\left(\left(M^{\prime} V-I_{n}\right)_{i j}\right)>0 \quad(i=1, \ldots, n-1 ; j=1, \ldots, n-1 ; s \in I)
$$

We now perform an "approximate Gaussian elimination" over $\Gamma_{I}$ to transform $M^{\prime} V$ into a new matrix $N$ with $w_{s}\left(N-I_{n}\right)>0$ for $s \in I$. First, define a sequence of matrices $\left\{X^{(h)}\right\}_{h=0}^{\infty}$ by $X^{(0)}=M^{\prime} V$ and

$$
X_{i j}^{(h+1)}= \begin{cases}X_{i j}^{(h)} & i<n \\ X_{n j}^{(h)}-\sum_{m=1}^{n-1} X_{n m}^{(h)} X_{m j}^{(h)} & i=n\end{cases}
$$

note that $X^{(h+1)}$ is obtained from $X^{(h)}$ by subtracting $X_{n m}^{(h)}$ times the $m$-th row from the $n$-th row for $m=1, \ldots, n-1$ in succession. At each step, for each $s \in I, \min _{1 \leq j \leq n-1}\left\{w_{s}\left(X_{n j}^{(h)}\right)\right\}$ increases by at least $\min _{1 \leq i, j \leq n-1}\left\{w_{s}\left(\left(M^{\prime} V-\right.\right.\right.$ $\left.\left.\left.I_{n}\right)_{i j}\right)\right\}$; the latter is bounded away from zero over all $s \in I$, because $I$ is closed and $w_{s}(x)$ is a continuous function of $s$. Thus for $h$ sufficiently large, we have

$$
w_{s}\left(X_{n j}^{(h)}\right)>\max \left\{0, \max _{1 \leq i \leq n-1}\left\{-w_{s}\left(X_{i n}^{(h)}\right)\right\}\right\} \quad(s \in I ; j=1, \ldots, n-1)
$$

Pick such an $h$ and set $X=X^{(h)}$; note that $\operatorname{det}(X)=\operatorname{det}\left(M^{\prime} V\right)$, so $w_{s}(\operatorname{det}(X)-1)>0$ for $s \in I$. For $s \in I$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{s}\left(\left(X-I_{n}\right)_{i j}\right)>0 & (i=1, \ldots, n ; j=1, \ldots, n-1) \\
w_{s}\left(X_{i n} X_{n j}\right)>0 & (i=1, \ldots, n-1 ; j=1, \ldots, n-1)
\end{aligned}
$$

and hence also $w_{s}\left(X_{n n}-1\right)>0$.

Next, we perform "approximate backsubstitution". Define a sequence of matrices $\left\{W^{(h)}\right\}_{h=0}^{\infty}$ by setting $W^{(0)}=X$ and

$$
W_{i j}^{(h+1)}= \begin{cases}W_{i j}^{(h)}-W_{i n}^{(h)} W_{n j}^{(h)} & i<n \\ W_{i j}^{(h)} & i=n\end{cases}
$$

note that $W^{(h+1)}$ is obtained from $W^{(h)}$ by subtracting $W_{i n}^{(h)}$ times the $n$-th row from the $i$-th row for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$. At each step, for $s \in I, w_{s}\left(W_{i n}^{(h)}\right)$ increases by at least $w_{s}\left(X_{n n}-1\right)$; again, the latter is bounded away from zero over all $s \in I$ because $I$ is closed and $w_{s}(x)$ is continuous in $s$. Thus for $h$ sufficiently large,

$$
w_{s}\left(W_{i n}^{(h)}\right)>0 \quad(s \in I ; 1 \leq i \leq n-1)
$$

Pick such an $h$ and set $W=W_{h}$; then $w_{s}\left(W-I_{n}\right)>0$ for $s \in I$. (Note that the inequality $w_{s}\left(X_{i n} X_{n j}\right)>0$ for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$ and $j=1, \ldots, n-1$ ensures that the second set of row operations does not disturb the fact that $w_{s}\left(W_{i j}^{(h)}\right)>0$ for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$ and $j=1, \ldots, n-1$.)
To conclude, note that by construction, $\left(M^{\prime} V\right)^{-1} W$ is a product of elementary matrices over $\Gamma_{I}$, each consisting of the diagonal matrix plus one off-diagonal entry. By suitably approximating the off-diagonal entry of each matrix in the product by an element of $\Gamma_{r}$, we get an invertible matrix $Y$ over $\Gamma_{r}$ such that $w_{s}\left(M^{\prime} V Y-I_{n}\right)>0$ for $s \in I$. We may thus take $U=A^{-1} V Y$ to obtain the desired result.

We also need a factorization lemma in the manner of [19, Lemma 6.4].
Lemma 2.7.2. Let $I=[a, b]$ and $J=[c, d]$ be subintervals of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$, with $a \leq c \leq b \leq d$, and let $M$ be an $n \times n$ matrix over $\Gamma_{I \cap J}$ with $w_{s}\left(M-I_{n}\right)>0$ for $s \in I \cap J$. Then there exist invertible $n \times n$ matrices $U$ over $\Gamma_{I}$ and $V$ over $\Gamma_{J}$ such that $M=U V$.

Proof. We construct sequences of matrices $U_{l}$ and $V_{l}$ over $\Gamma_{I}$ and $\Gamma_{J}$, respectively, with

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{s}\left(U_{l}-I_{n}\right) & \geq(s / c) w_{c}\left(M-I_{n}\right) & (s \in[a, c]) \\
w_{s}\left(V_{l}-I_{n}\right) & \geq(s / b) w_{b}\left(M-I_{n}\right) & (s \in[b, d]) \\
\min \left\{w_{s}\left(U_{l}-I_{n}\right), w_{s}\left(V_{l}-I_{n}\right)\right\} & \geq w_{s}\left(M-I_{n}\right) & (s \in[c, b]) \\
w_{s}\left(U_{l}^{-1} M V_{l}^{-1}-I_{n}\right) & \geq 2^{l} w_{s}\left(M-I_{n}\right) & (s \in[c, b])
\end{aligned}
$$

as follows. Start with $U_{0}=V_{0}=I_{n}$. Given $U_{l}, V_{l}$, put $M_{l}=U_{l}^{-1} M V_{l}^{-1}$. Apply Corollary 2.5.9 to split $M_{l}-I_{n}=Y_{l}+Z_{l}$ with $Y_{l}$ defined over $\Gamma_{I}, Z_{l}$ defined over $\Gamma_{J}$, and

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{s}\left(Y_{l}\right) & \geq(s / c) w_{c}\left(M_{l}-I_{n}\right) \geq(s / c) w_{c}\left(M-I_{n}\right) \quad(s \in[a, c]) \\
w_{s}\left(Z_{l}\right) & \geq(s / b) w_{b}\left(M_{l}-I_{n}\right) \geq(s / b) w_{b}\left(M-I_{n}\right) \quad(s \in[b, d]) \\
\min \left\{w_{s}\left(Y_{l}\right), w_{s}\left(Z_{l}\right)\right\} & \geq w_{s}\left(M_{l}-I_{n}\right) \geq 2^{l} w_{s}\left(M-I_{n}\right) \quad(s \in[c, b]) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Put $U_{l+1}=U_{l}\left(I+Y_{l}\right)$ and $V_{l+1}=\left(I+Z_{l}\right) V_{l}$; then one calculates that $w_{s}\left(M_{l+1}-\right.$ $\left.I_{n}\right) \geq 2^{l+1} w_{s}\left(M-I_{n}\right)$ for $s \in[c, b]$.
We deduce that the sequences $\left\{U_{l}\right\}$ and $\left\{V_{l}\right\}$ each converge under $w_{s}$ for $s \in$ $[c, b]$, and the limits $U$ and $V$ satisfy $\min \left\{w_{s}\left(U-I_{n}\right), w_{s}\left(V-I_{n}\right)\right\} \geq w_{s}\left(M-I_{n}\right)$ for $s \in[c, b]$, and $M=U V$. However, the subset $x \in \Gamma_{I}$ on which

$$
w_{s}(x) \geq \begin{cases}(s / c) w_{c}\left(M-I_{n}\right) & s \in[a, c] \\ w_{s}\left(M-I_{n}\right) & s \in[c, b]\end{cases}
$$

is complete under any one $w_{s}$, so $U$ has entries in $\Gamma_{I}$ and $w_{s}\left(U-I_{n}\right) \geq$ $(s / c) w_{c}\left(M-I_{n}\right)$ for $s \in[a, c]$. Similarly, $V$ has entries in $\Gamma_{J}$ and $w_{s}\left(V-I_{n}\right) \geq$ $(s / b) w_{b}\left(M-I_{n}\right)$ for $s \in[b, d]$. In particular, $U$ and $V$ are invertible over $\Gamma_{I}$ and $\Gamma_{J}$, and $M=U V$, yielding the desired factorization.

### 2.8 Vector bundles

Over an open rigid analytic annulus, one specifies a vector bundle by specifying a vector bundle (necessarily freely generated by global sections) on each closed subannulus and providing glueing data; if the field of coefficients is spherically complete, it can be shown that the result is again freely generated by global sections. Here we generalize the discretely valued case of this result to analytic rings. (For rank 1, the annulus statement can be extracted from results of [28]; the general case can be found in [21, Theorem 3.4.3]. In any case, it follows from our Theorem 2.8.4 below.)

Definition 2.8.1. Let $I$ be a subinterval of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$, and let $S$ be a collection of closed subintervals of $I$ closed under finite intersections, whose union is all of $I$. Define an $S$-vector bundle over $\Gamma_{I}$ to be a collection consisting of one finite free $\Gamma_{J}$-module $M_{J}$ for each $J \in S$, plus isomorphisms

$$
\iota_{J_{1}, J_{2}}: M_{J_{1}} \otimes_{\Gamma_{J_{1}}} \Gamma_{J_{2}} \cong M_{J_{2}}
$$

whenever $J_{2} \subseteq J_{1}$, satisfying the compatibility condition $\iota_{J_{2}, J_{3}} \circ \iota_{J_{1}, J_{2}}=\iota_{J_{1}, J_{3}}$ whenever $J_{3} \subseteq J_{2} \subseteq J_{1}$. These may be viewed as forming a category in which a morphism between the collections $\left\{M_{J}\right\}$ and $\left\{N_{J}\right\}$ consists of a collection of morphisms $M_{J} \rightarrow N_{J}$ of $\Gamma_{J}$-modules which commute with the isomorphisms $\iota_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$.

This definition obeys the analogue of the usual glueing property for coherent sheaves on an affinoid space (i.e., the theorem of Kiehl-Tate).

Lemma 2.8.2. Let $I$ be a subinterval of $\left[0, r_{0}\right)$ bounded away from $r_{0}$, and let $S_{1} \subseteq S_{2}$ be two collections of closed subintervals of $I$ as in Definition 2.8.1. Then the natural functor from the category of $S_{2}$-vector bundles over $\Gamma_{I}$ to $S_{1}$-vector bundles over $\Gamma_{I}$ is an equivalence.

Proof. We define a quasi-inverse functor as follows. Given $J \in S_{2}$, by compactness we can choose $J_{1}, \ldots, J_{m} \in S_{1}$ with $J \subseteq J^{\prime}=J_{1} \cup \cdots \cup J_{m}$; it is enough to consider the case where $m=2$ and $J_{1} \cap J_{2} \neq \emptyset$, as we can repeat the construction to treat the general case.
Define $M_{J^{\prime}}$ to be the $\Gamma_{J^{\prime}}$-submodule of $M_{J_{1}} \oplus M_{J_{2}}$ consisting of those pairs $\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}, \mathbf{v}_{2}\right)$ such that

$$
\iota_{J_{1}, J_{1} \cap J_{2}}\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}\right)=\iota_{J_{2}, J_{1} \cap J_{2}}\left(\mathbf{v}_{2}\right)
$$

Let $\mathbf{v}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{v}_{n}$ be a basis of $M_{J_{1}}$ and let $\mathbf{w}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{w}_{n}$ be a basis of $M_{J_{2}}$. Then there is an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $A$ over $M_{J_{1} \cap J_{2}}$ given by $\mathbf{w}_{j}=\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{v}_{i}$. By Lemma 2.7.2, $A$ can be factored as $U V$, where $U$ is invertible over $\Gamma_{J_{1}}$ and $V$ is invertible over $\Gamma_{J_{2}}$. Set

$$
\mathbf{e}_{j}=\left(\sum_{i} U_{i j} \mathbf{v}_{i}, \sum_{i}\left(V^{-1}\right)_{i j} \mathbf{w}_{i}\right)
$$

then $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ form a basis of $M_{J^{\prime}}$, since the first components form a basis of $M_{J_{1}}$, the second components form a basis of $M_{J_{2}}$, and the intersection of $\Gamma_{J_{1}}$ and $\Gamma_{J_{2}}$ within $\Gamma_{J_{1} \cap J_{2}}$ equals $\Gamma_{J_{1} \cup J_{2}}$ (by Corollary 2.5.9). In particular, the natural maps $M_{J^{\prime}} \otimes_{\Gamma_{J^{\prime}}} \Gamma_{J_{i}} \rightarrow M_{J_{i}}$ for $i=1,2$ are isomorphisms. We may thus set $M_{J}=M_{J^{\prime}} \otimes_{\Gamma_{J^{\prime}}} \Gamma_{J}$.

Definition 2.8.3. By Lemma 2.8.2, the category of $S$-vector bundles over $\Gamma_{I}$ is canonically independent of the choice of $S$. We thus refer to its elements simply as vector bundles over $\Gamma_{I}$.

It follows that for $I$ closed, any vector bundle over $\Gamma_{I}$ is represented by a free module; a key result for us is that one has a similar result over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$.

Theorem 2.8.4. For $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$, the natural functor from finite free $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r^{-}}$ modules to vector bundles over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}=\Gamma_{(0, r]}$ is an equivalence.

Proof. To produce a quasi-inverse functor, let $J_{1} \subseteq J_{2} \subseteq \cdots$ be an increasing sequence of closed intervals with right endpoints $\bar{r}$, whose union is $(0, r]$; for ease of notation, write $\Gamma_{i}$ for $\Gamma_{J_{i}}$. We can specify a vector bundle over $\Gamma_{i}$ by specifying a finite free $\Gamma_{i}$-module $E_{i}$ for each $i$, plus identifications $E_{i+1} \otimes_{\Gamma_{i+1}}$ $\Gamma_{i} \cong E_{i}$.
Choose a basis $\mathbf{v}_{1,1}, \ldots, \mathbf{v}_{1, n}$ of $E_{1}$. Given a basis $\mathbf{v}_{i, 1}, \ldots, \mathbf{v}_{i, n}$ of $E_{i}$, we choose a basis $\mathbf{v}_{i+1,1}, \ldots, \mathbf{v}_{i+1, n}$ of $E_{i+1}$ as follows. Pick any basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of $E_{i+1}$, and define an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $M_{i}$ over $\Gamma_{i}$ by writing $\mathbf{e}_{l}=\sum_{j}\left(M_{i}\right)_{j l} \mathbf{v}_{i, j}$. Apply Lemma 2.7.1 to produce an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $U_{i}$ over $\Gamma_{r}$ such that $w_{s}\left(M_{i} U_{i}-I_{n}\right)>0$ for $s \in J_{i}$. Apply Lemma 2.5 .11 to produce an $n \times n$ matrix $V_{i}$ over $\Gamma_{r}$ with $w_{s}\left(M_{i} U_{i}-I_{n}-V_{i}\right) \geq \min _{m<0}\left\{v_{m, s}\left(M_{i} U_{i}-I_{n}\right)\right\}$ for $s \in J_{i}$; then $w_{r}\left(V_{i}\right)>0$, so $I_{n}+V_{i}$ is invertible over $\Gamma_{r}$. Put $W_{i}=M_{i} U_{i}\left(I_{n}+V_{i}\right)^{-1}$, and define $\mathbf{v}_{i+1,1}, \ldots, \mathbf{v}_{i+1, n}$ by $\mathbf{v}_{i+1, l}=\sum_{j}\left(W_{i}\right)_{j l} \mathbf{v}_{i, j}$; these form another basis of $E_{i+1}$ because we changed basis over $\Gamma_{r}$.

If we write $J_{i}=\left[r_{i}, r\right]$, then for any fixed $s \in(0, r]$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{s}\left(W_{i}-I_{n}\right) & =w_{s}\left(\left(M_{i} U_{i}-I_{n}-V_{i}\right)\left(I_{n}+V_{i}\right)^{-1}\right) \\
& \geq \min _{m<0}\left\{v_{m, s}\left(M_{i} U_{i}-I_{n}\right)\right\} \\
& =\min _{m<0}\left\{\left(s / r_{i}\right) v_{m, r_{i}}\left(M_{i} U_{i}-I_{n}\right)+\left(1-s / r_{i}\right) m\right\} \\
& \geq \min _{m<0}\left\{v_{m, r_{i}}\left(M_{i} U_{i}-I_{n}\right)\right\}+\left(s / r_{i}-1\right) \\
& >\left(s / r_{i}-1\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

which tends to $\infty$ as $i \rightarrow \infty$. Thus the product $W_{1} W_{2} \cdots$ converges to an invertible matrix $W$ over $\Gamma_{\text {an }, r}$, and the basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of $E_{1}$ defined by

$$
\mathbf{e}_{l}=\sum_{j} W_{j l} \mathbf{v}_{1, j}
$$

actually forms a basis of each $E_{i}$. Hence the original vector bundle can be reconstructed from the free $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$-module generated by $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$; this yields the desired quasi-inverse.

Corollary 2.8.5. For $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$, let $M$ be a finite free $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$-module. Then every closed submodule of $M$ is free; in particular, every closed ideal of $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ is principal.

Proof. A submodule is closed if and only if it gives rise to a sub-vector bundle of the vector bundle associated to $M$; thus the claim follows from Theorem 2.8.4.

Remark 2.8.6. One might expect that more generally every vector bundle over $\Gamma_{I}$ is represented by a finite free $\Gamma_{I}$-module; we did not verify this.

### 2.9 The BÉzout property

One pleasant consequence of Theorem 2.8.4 is the fact that the ring $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ has the Bézout property, as we verify in this section. We start by refining the conclusion of Lemma 2.6.7 (again, compare [19, Lemma 3.25]).

Lemma 2.9.1. For $r, s, s^{\prime} \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$ with $s^{\prime}<s<r$, and $f \in \Gamma_{\left[s^{\prime}, r\right]}$, there exists $g \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with the following properties.
(a) The ideals generated by $f$ and $g$ in $\Gamma_{[s, r]}$ coincide.
(b) The slopes of $g$ in $[0, r]$ are all contained in $[s, r]$.

Moreover, any such $g$ also has the following property.
(c) $f$ is divisible by $g$ in $\Gamma_{\left[s^{\prime}, r\right]}$.

Proof. By Lemma 2.6.7, we can find a unit $u$ of $\Gamma_{\left[s^{\prime}, r\right]}$ such that $u f \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ and the slopes of $u f$ in $[0, r]$ are all contained in $[s, r]$. We may thus take $g=u f$ to obtain at least one $g \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ satisfying (a) and (b); hereafter, we let $g$ be any element of $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ satisfying (a) and (b). Then the multiplicity of each element of $[s, r]$ as a slope of $g$ is equal to its multiplicity as a slope of $f$. Since $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is a PID by Proposition 2.6.8, we can find an element $h \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ generating the ideal generated by $u f$ and $g$ in $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; in particular, the multiplicity of each element of $[s, r]$ as a slope of $h$ is less than or equal to its multiplicity as a slope of $g$. However, $h$ must also generate the ideal generated by $f$ and $g$ in $\Gamma_{[s, r]}$, which is generated already by $f$ alone; in particular, the multiplicity of each element of $[s, r]$ as a slope of $f$ is equal to its multiplicity as a slope of $h$.
We conclude that each element of $[s, r]$ occurs as a slope of $f, g, h$ all with the same multiplicity. Since $g$ only has slopes in $[s, r], g / h$ must be a unit in $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; hence $u f$ is already divisible by $g$ in $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, so $f$ is divisible by $g$ in $\Gamma_{\left[s^{\prime}, r\right]}$ as desired.

Lemma 2.9.2. Given $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$ and $x \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with greatest slope $s_{0}<r$, choose $r^{\prime} \in\left(s_{0}, r\right)$. Then for any $y \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ and any $c>0$, there exists $z \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with $y-z$ divisible by $x$ in $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$, such that $w_{s}(z)>c$ for $s \in\left[r^{\prime}, r\right]$.

Proof. As in the proof of Lemma 2.6.1, we can find a unit $u \in \Gamma_{r}$ and an integer $i$ such that $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}\left(u x \pi^{i}\right)\right\}$ is achieved by $n=0$ but not by any $n>0$, and that $v_{0}\left(u x \pi^{i}-1\right)>0$. Since $s_{0}<r$, in fact $\min _{n}\left\{v_{n, r}\left(u x \pi^{i}\right)\right\}$ is only achieved by $n=0$, so $w_{r}\left(u x \pi^{i}-1\right)>0$. Similarly, $w_{s}\left(u x \pi^{i}-1\right)>0$ for $s \in\left[r^{\prime}, r\right]$; since $\left[r^{\prime}, r\right]$ is a closed interval, we can choose $d>0$ such that $w_{s}\left(u x \pi^{i}-1\right) \geq d$ for $s \in\left[r^{\prime}, r\right]$. Now simply take

$$
z=y\left(1-u x \pi^{i}\right)^{N}
$$

for some integer $N$ with $N d+w_{s}(y)>c$ for $s \in\left[r^{\prime}, r\right]$.
We next introduce a "principal parts lemma" (compare [19, Lemma 3.31]).
Lemma 2.9.3. For $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$, let $I_{1} \subset I_{2} \subset \cdots$ be an increasing sequence of closed subintervals of $(0, r]$ with right endpoints $r$, whose union is all of $(0, r]$, and put $\Gamma_{i}=\Gamma_{I_{i}}$. Given $f \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ and $g_{i} \in \Gamma_{i}$ such that for each $i, g_{i+1}-g_{i}$ is divisible by $f$ in $\Gamma_{i}$, there exists $g \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ such that for each $i, g-g_{i}$ is divisible by $f$ in $\Gamma_{i}$.

Proof. Apply Lemma 2.9.1 to produce $f_{i} \in \Gamma_{r}$ dividing $f$ in $\Gamma_{\text {an }, r}$, such that $f$ and $f_{i}$ generate the same ideal in $\Gamma_{i}, f_{i}$ only has slopes in $I_{i}$, and $f / f_{i}$ has no slopes in $I_{i}$; put $f_{0}=1$. By Lemma 2.9.1 again (with $s^{\prime}$ varying), $f_{i}$ is divisible by $f_{i-1}$ in $\Gamma_{\text {an, } r}$, hence also in $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; put $h_{i}=f_{i} / f_{i-1} \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ and $h_{0}=1$. Set $x_{0}=0$. Given $x_{i} \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with $x_{i}-g_{i}$ divisible by $f_{i}$ in $\Gamma_{i}$, note that the ideal generated by $h_{i+1}$ and $f_{i}$ in $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is principal by Proposition 2.6.8. Moreover, any generator has no slopes by Lemma 2.4.7 and so must be a unit
in $\Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ by Corollary 2.5.12. That is, we can find $a_{i+1}, b_{i+1} \in \Gamma_{r}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with $a_{i+1} h_{i+1}+b_{i+1} f_{i}=1$. Moreover, by applying Lemma 2.9.2, we may choose $a_{i+1}, b_{i+1}$ with $w_{s}\left(b_{i+1}\left(g_{i+1}-x_{i}\right) f_{i}\right) \geq i$ for $s \in I_{i}$. (More precisely, apply Lemma 2.9.2 with the roles of $x$ and $y$ therein played by $h_{i+1}$ and $b_{i+1}$, respectively; this is valid because $h_{i+1}$ has greatest slope less than any element of $I_{i}$.)
Now put $x_{i+1}=x_{i}+b_{i+1}\left(g_{i+1}-x_{i}\right) f_{i}$; then $x_{i+1}-g_{i}$ is divisible by $f_{i}$ in $\Gamma_{i}$, as then is $x_{i+1}-g_{i+1}$ since $g_{i+1}-g_{i}$ is divisible by $f_{i}$ in $\Gamma_{i}$. By Lemma 2.9.1, $x_{i+1}-g_{i+1}$ is divisible by $f_{i}$ also in $\Gamma_{i+1}$. Since $x_{i+1}-g_{i+1}$ is also divisible by $h_{i+1}$ in $\Gamma_{i+1}, x_{i+1}-g_{i+1}$ is divisible by $f_{i+1}$ in $\Gamma_{i+1}$.
For any given $s$, we have $w_{s}\left(x_{i+1}-x_{i}\right) \geq i$ for $i$ large, so the $x_{i}$ converge to a limit $g$ in $\Gamma_{\text {an }, r}$. Since $g-g_{i}$ is divisible by $f_{i}$ in $\Gamma_{i}$, it is also divisible by $f$ in $\Gamma_{i}$. This yields the desired result.

Remark 2.9.4. The use of the $f_{i}$ in the proof of Lemma 2.9.3 is analogous to the use of "slope factorizations" in [19]. Slope factorizations (convergent products of pure elements converging to a specified element of $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ ), which are inspired by the comparable construction in [28], will not be used explicitly here; see [19, Lemma 3.26] for their construction.

We are finally ready to analyze the Bézout property.
Definition 2.9.5. A Bézout ring/domain is a ring/domain in which every finitely generated ideal is principal. Such rings look like principal ideal rings from the point of view of finitely generated modules. For instance:

- Every n-tuple of elements of a Bézout domain which generate the unit ideal is unimodular, i.e., it occurs as the first row of a matrix of determinant 1 [19, Lemma 2.3]. (Beware that [19, Lemma 2.3] is stated for a Bézout ring but is only valid for a Bézout domain.)
- The saturated span of any subset of a finite free module over a Bézout domain is a direct summand [19, Lemma 2.4].
- Every finitely generated locally free module over a Bézout domain is free [19, Proposition 2.5], as is every finitely presented torsion-free module [12, Proposition 4.9].
- Any finitely generated submodule of a finite free module over a Bézout ring is free (straightforward).

Theorem 2.9.6. For $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$, the ring $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ is a Bézout domain (as then is $\left.\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\right)$. More precisely, if $J$ is an ideal of $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$, the following are equivalent.
(a) The ideal $J$ is closed.
(b) The ideal J is finitely generated.
(c) The ideal $J$ is principal.

Proof. Clearly (c) implies both (a) and (b). Also, (a) implies (c) by Theorem 2.8.4. It thus suffices to show that (b) implies (a); by induction, it is enough to check in case $J$ is generated by two nonzero elements $x, y$. Moreover, we may form the closure of $J$, find a generator $z$, and then divide $x$ and $y$ by $z$; in other words, we may assume that 1 is in the closure of $J$, and then what we are to show is that $1 \in J$.
Let $I_{1} \subset I_{2} \subset \cdots$ be an increasing sequence of closed subintervals of $(0, r]$, with right endpoints $r$, whose union is all of $(0, r]$. Then $x$ and $y$ generate the unit ideal in $\Gamma_{i}=\Gamma_{I_{i}}$ for each $i$; that is, we can choose $a_{i}, b_{i} \in \Gamma_{i}$ with $a_{i} x+b_{i} y=1$. Note that $b_{i+1}-b_{i}$ is divisible by $x$ in $\Gamma_{i}$; by Lemma 2.9.3, we can choose $b \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ with $b-b_{i}$ divisible by $x$ in $\Gamma_{i}$ for each $i$. Then $b y-1$ is divisible by $x$ in each $\Gamma_{i}$, hence also in $\Gamma_{\text {an }, r}$ (by Corollary 2.5.7); that is, $x$ and $y$ generate the unit ideal in $\Gamma_{\text {an }, r}$, as desired.
We have thus shown that (a), (b), (c) are equivalent, proving that $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ is a Bézout ring. Since $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ is the union of the $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$ for $r \in\left(0, r_{0}\right)$, it is also a Bézout ring because any finitely generated ideal is generated by elements of some $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$.

Remark 2.9.7. In Lazard's theory (in which $\Gamma_{I}$ becomes the ring of rigid analytic functions on the annulus $\left.\log _{|\pi|}|u| \in I\right)$, the implication $(\mathrm{b}) \Longrightarrow(\mathrm{a})$ is [28, Proposition 11], and holds without restriction on the coefficient field. The implication $(\mathrm{a}) \Longrightarrow(\mathrm{b})$ is equivalent to spherical completeness of the coefficient field [28, Théorème 2]; however, the analogue here would probably require $K$ also to be spherically complete (compare Remark 2.8.6), which is an undesirable restriction. For instance, it would complicate the process of descending the slope filtration in Chapter 6.

## $3 \sigma$-MODULES

We now introduce modules equipped with a semilinear endomorphism ( $\sigma$ modules) and study their properties, specifically over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$. In order to highlight the parallels between this theory and the theory of stable vector bundles (see for instance [33]), we have shaped our presentation along the lines of that of Hartl and Pink [17]; they study vector bundles with a Frobenius structure on a punctured disc over a complete nonarchimedean field of equal characteristic $p$, and prove results very similar to our results over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$.
Beware that our overall sign convention is "arithmetic" and not "geometric"; it thus agrees with the sign conventions of [18] (and of [19]), but disagrees with the sign convention of [17] and with the usual convention in the vector bundle setting.

Remark 3.0.1. We retain all notation from Chapter 2, except that we redefine the term "slope"; see Definition 3.4.1. In particular, $K$ is a field complete with respect to the valuation $v_{K}$, and $\Gamma^{K}$ is assumed to have enough $r_{0}$-units for some $r_{0}>0$. Remember that $v_{K}$ is allowed to be trivial unless otherwise
specified; that means any result about $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ also applies to $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, unless its statement explicitly requires $v_{K}$ to be nontrivial.

## $3.1 \quad \sigma$-MODULES

Definition 3.1.1. For a ring $R$ containing $\mathcal{O}$ in which $\pi$ is not a zero divisor, equipped with a ring endomorphism $\sigma$, a $\sigma$-module over a ring $R$ is a finite locally free $R$-module $M$ equipped with a map $F: \sigma^{*} M \rightarrow M$ (the Frobenius action) which becomes an isomorphism after inverting $\pi$. (Here $\sigma^{*} M=M \otimes_{R, \sigma}$ $R$; that is, view $R$ as a module over itself via $\sigma$, and tensor it with $M$ over $R$.) We can view $M$ as a left module over the twisted polynomial ring $R\{\sigma\}$; we can also view $F$ as a $\sigma$-linear additive endomorphism of $M$. A homomorphism of $\sigma$ modules is a module homomorphism equivariant with respect to the Frobenius actions.
Remark 3.1.2. We will mostly consider $\sigma$-modules over Bézout rings like $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$, in which case there is no harm in replacing "locally free" by "free" in the definition of a $\sigma$-module.
Remark 3.1.3. The category of $\sigma$-modules is typically not abelian (unless $v_{K}$ is trivial), because we cannot form cokernels thanks to the requirement that the underlying modules be locally free.
Remark 3.1.4. For any positive integer $a, \sigma^{a}$ is also a Frobenius lift, so we may speak of $\sigma^{a}$-modules. This will be relevant when we want to perform "restriction of scalars" in Section 3.2. However, there is no loss of generality in stating definitions and theorems in the case $a=1$, i.e., for $\sigma$-modules.
Definition 3.1.5. Given a $\sigma$-module $M$ of rank $n$ and an integer $c$ (which must be nonnegative if $\pi^{-1} \notin R$ ), define the twist $M(c)$ of $M$ by $c$ to be the module $M$ with the Frobenius action multiplied by $\pi^{c}$. (Beware that this definition reflects an earlier choice of normalization, as in Remark 2.1.11, and a choice of a sign convention.) If $\pi$ is invertible in $R$, define the dual $M^{\vee}$ of $M$ to be the $\sigma$-module $\operatorname{Hom}_{R}(M, R) \cong\left(\wedge^{n-1} M\right) \otimes\left(\wedge^{n} M\right)^{\otimes-1}$ and the internal hom of $M, N$ as $M^{\vee} \otimes N$.
Definition 3.1.6. Given a $\sigma$-module $M$ over a ring $R$, let $H^{0}(M)$ and $H^{1}(M)$ denote the kernel and cokernel, respectively, of the map $F-1$ on $M$; note that if $N$ is another $\sigma$-module, then there is a natural bilinear map $H^{0}(M) \times H^{1}(N) \rightarrow$ $H^{1}(M \otimes N)$. Given two $\sigma$-modules $M_{1}$ and $M_{2}$ over $R$, put $\operatorname{Ext}\left(M_{1}, M_{2}\right)=$ $H^{1}\left(M_{1}^{\vee} \otimes M_{2}\right)$; a standard homological calculation (as in [17, Proposition 2.4]) shows that $\operatorname{Ext}\left(M_{1}, M_{2}\right)$ coincides with the Yoneda Ext ${ }^{1}$ in this category. That is, $\operatorname{Ext}\left(M_{1}, M_{2}\right)$ classifies short exact sequences $0 \rightarrow M_{2} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{1} \rightarrow 0$ of $\sigma$-modules over $R$, up to isomorphisms


Documenta Mathematica 10 (2005) 447-525
which induce the identity maps on $M_{1}$ and $M_{2}$.

### 3.2 Restriction of Frobenius

We now introduce two functors analogous to those induced by the "finite maps" in [17, Section 7]. Beware that the analogy is not perfect; see Remark 3.2.2.

Definition 3.2.1. Fix a ring $R$ equipped with an endomorphism $\sigma$. For $a$ a positive integer, let $[a]: R\left\{\sigma^{a}\right\} \rightarrow R\{\sigma\}$ be the natural inclusion homomorphism of twisted polynomial rings. Define the a-pushforward functor $[a]_{*}$, from $\sigma$-modules to $\sigma^{a}$-modules, to be the restriction functor along [a]. Define the a-pullback functor $[a]^{*}$, from $\sigma^{a}$-modules to $\sigma$-modules, to be the extension of scalars functor

$$
M \mapsto R\{\sigma\} \otimes_{R\left\{\sigma^{a}\right\}} M
$$

Note that $[a]^{*}$ and $[a]_{*}$ are left and right adjoints of each other. Also, $[a]^{*}\left[a^{\prime}\right]^{*}=$ $\left[a a^{\prime}\right]^{*}$ and $[a]_{*}\left[a^{\prime}\right]_{*}=\left[a a^{\prime}\right]_{*}$. Furthermore, $[a]_{*}(M(c))=\left([a]_{*} M\right)(a c)$.

Remark 3.2.2. There are some discrepancies in the analogy with [17], due to the fact that there the corresponding map $[a]$ is actually a homomorphism of the underlying ring, rather than a change of Frobenius. The result is that some (but not all!) of the properties of the pullback and pushforward are swapped between here and [17]. For an example of this mismatch in action, see Proposition 3.4.4.

Remark 3.2.3. The functors $[a]$ will ultimately serve to rescale the slopes of a $\sigma$-module; using them makes it possible to avoid the reliance in [19, Chapter 4] on making extensions of $\mathcal{O}$. Among other things, this lets us get away with normalizing $w$ in terms of the choice of $\mathcal{O}$, since we will not have to change that choice at any point except in Lemma 5.2.4.

Lemma 3.2.4. For any positive integer a and any integer $c$, $[a]_{*}[a]^{*}(R(c)) \cong$ $R(c)^{\oplus a}$.

Proof. We can write

$$
[a]_{*}[a]^{*}(R(c)) \cong \oplus_{i=0}^{a-1}\left\{\sigma^{i}\right\}(R(c)),
$$

where on the right side $R\left\{\sigma^{a}\right\}$ acts separately on each factor. Hence the claim follows. (Compare [17, Proposition 7.4].)

Lemma 3.2.5. Suppose that the residue field of $\mathcal{O}$ contains an algebraic closure of $\mathbb{F}_{q}$. For $i$ a positive integer, let $L_{i}$ be the fixed field of $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ under $\sigma^{i}$.
(a) For any $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ and any positive integer $a$, $H^{0}\left([a]_{*} M\right)=H^{0}(M) \otimes_{L_{1}} L_{a}$.
(b) For any $\sigma$-modules $M$ and $N$ over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ and any positive integer $a$, $M \cong N$ if and only if $[a]_{*} M \cong[a]_{*} N$.

Proof. (a) It suffices to show that $H^{0}\left([a]_{*} M\right)$ admits a basis invariant under the induced action of $\sigma$. Since $\sigma$ generates $\operatorname{Gal}\left(L_{a} / L_{1}\right)$, this follows from Hilbert's Theorem 90.
(b) A morphism $[a]_{*} M \rightarrow[a]_{*} N$ corresponds to an element of $V=$ $H^{0}\left(\left([a]_{*} M\right)^{\vee} \otimes[a]_{*} N\right) \cong H^{0}\left([a]_{*}\left(M^{\vee} \otimes N\right)\right)$, which by (a) coincides with $H^{0}\left(M^{\vee} \otimes N\right) \otimes_{L_{1}} L_{a}$. If there is an isomorphism $[a]_{*} M \cong[a]_{*} N$, then the determinant locus on $V$ is not all of $V$; hence the same is true on $H^{0}\left(M^{\vee} \otimes N\right)$. We can thus find an $F$-invariant element of $M^{\vee} \otimes N$ corresponding to an isomorphism $M \cong N$. (Compare [17, Propositions 7.3 and 7.5].)

## $3.3 \quad \sigma$-MODULES OF RANK 1

In this section, we analyze some $\sigma$-modules of rank 1 over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$; this amounts to solving some simple equations involving $\sigma$, as in [19, Proposition 3.19] (compare also [17, Propositions 3.1 and 3.3]).

Definition 3.3.1. Define the twisted powers $\pi^{\{m\}}$ of $\pi$ by the two-way recurrence

$$
\pi^{\{0\}}=1, \quad \pi^{\{m+1\}}=\left(\pi^{\{m\}}\right)^{\sigma} \pi
$$

First, we give a classification result.
Proposition 3.3.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module of rank 1 over $R$, for $R$ one of $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}, \Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right], \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$. Then there exists a unique integer $n$, which is nonnegative if $R=\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$, such that $M \cong R(n)$.
Proof. Let $\mathbf{v}$ be a generator of $M$, and write $F \mathbf{v}=x \mathbf{v}$. Then $x$ must be a unit in $R$, so by Corollary 2.5.12, $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ and so $w(x)$ is defined. If $M \cong R(n)$, we must then have $n=w(x)$; hence $n$ is unique if it exists.
Since the residue field of $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ is algebraically closed, we can find a unit $u$ in $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ such that $u^{\sigma} \pi^{-n} x \equiv u(\bmod \pi)$. Choose $r>0$ such that $w_{r}\left(u^{\sigma} \pi^{-n} x / u-1\right)>$ 0 ; then there exists a unit $y \in \Gamma^{\text {alg }}$ with $u^{\sigma} \pi^{-n} x / u=y^{\sigma} / y$, and a direct calculation (by induction on $m$ ) shows that $v_{m, r}(y)>0$ for all $m>0$. (For details, see the proof of Lemma 5.4.1.) Hence $y$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$, and so $\mathbf{w}=(u / y) \mathbf{v}$ is a generator of $M$ satisfying $F \mathbf{w}=\pi^{n} \mathbf{w}$. Thus there exists an isomorphism $M \cong R(n)$.
We next compute some instances of $H^{0}$.
Lemma 3.3.3. Let $n$ be a nonnegative integer. If $x \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ and $x-\pi^{n} x^{\sigma} \in$ $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, then $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.
Proof. Suppose the contrary; put $y=x-\pi^{n} x^{\sigma}$. We can find $m$ with $v_{m}(y)=\infty$ and $0<v_{m}(x)<\infty$, since both hold for $m$ sufficiently small by Corollary 2.5.6. Then

$$
v_{m}(x)>q^{-1} v_{m}(x)=q^{-1} v_{m}\left(\pi^{n} x^{\sigma}\right)=q^{-1} v_{m-n}\left(x^{\sigma}\right)=v_{m-n}(x) \geq v_{m}(x),
$$

contradiction.
Proposition 3.3.4. Let $n$ be an integer.
(a) If $n=0$, then $H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\operatorname{con}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](n)\right)=H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(n)\right) \neq 0$; moreover, any nonzero element of $H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\right)$ is a unit in $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$.
(b) If $n>0$, then $H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \operatorname{con}}(n)\right)=0$.
(c1) If $n<0$ and $v_{K}$ is trivial, then $H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(n)\right)=0$.
(c2) If $n<0, v_{K}$ is nontrivial, and $K$ is perfect, then $H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \operatorname{con}}(n)\right) \neq 0$.
Proof. The group $H^{0}(R(n))$ consists of those $x \in R$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\pi^{n} x^{\sigma}=x \tag{3.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

so our assertions are all really about the solvability of this equation.
(a) If $n=0$, then $H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](n)\right)=H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}(n)\right)$ by Lemma 3.3.3, and the former equals the fixed field of $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ under $\sigma$.
(b) By Lemma 3.3.3, any solution $x$ of (3.3.5) over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ actually belongs to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. In particular, $w(x)=w\left(x^{\sigma}\right)$ is well-defined. But (3.3.5) yields $w\left(x^{\sigma}\right)+n=w(x)$, which for $n>0$ forces $x=0$.
(c1) If $n<0$ and $v_{K}$ is trivial, then $w(x)=w\left(x^{\sigma}\right)$ is well-defined, but (3.3.5) yields $w\left(x^{\sigma}\right)+n=w(x)$, which forces $x=0$.
(c2) If $n<0, v_{K}$ is nontrivial, and $K$ is perfect, we may pick $\bar{u} \in K$ with $v_{K}(\bar{u})>0$ (since $v_{K}$ is nontrivial), and then set $x$ to be the limit of the convergent series

$$
\sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}}\left(\pi^{\{m\}}\right)^{n}\left[\bar{u}^{q^{m}}\right]
$$

to obtain a nonzero solution of (3.3.5).

REMARK 3.3.6. If $n<0, v_{K}$ is nontrivial, and $K$ is not perfect, then the size of $H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}(n)\right)$ depends on the particular choice of the Frobenius lift $\sigma$ on $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$. For instance, in the notation of Section 2.3, if $\sigma$ is a so-called "standard Frobenius lift" sending $u$ to $u^{q}$, then any solution $x=\sum x_{i} u^{i}$ of (3.3.5) must have $x_{i}=0$ whenever $i$ is not divisible by $q$. By the same token, $x_{i}=0$ whenever $i$ is not divisible by $q^{2}$, or by $q^{3}$, and so on; hence we must have $x \in \mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, which as in (b) above is impossible for $n>0$. On the other hand, if $u^{\sigma}=(u+1)^{q}-1$, then $x=\log (1+u) \in \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ satisfies $x^{\sigma}=q x$; indeed, the existence of such an $x$ is a backbone of the theory of $(\Phi, \Gamma)$-modules associated to $p$-adic Galois representations, as in [4].

We next consider $H^{1}$.

Proposition 3.3.7. Let $n$ be an integer.
(a) If $n=0$ and $K$ is separably closed, then $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\operatorname{con}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](n)\right)=$ $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(n)\right)=0$.
(b1) If $n \geq 0$, then the map $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](n)\right) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(n)\right)$ is injective.
(b2) If $n>0$ and $v_{K}$ is trivial, then $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(n)\right)=0$.
(b3) If $n>0, v_{K}$ is nontrivial, and $K$ is perfect, then $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}(n)\right) \neq 0$, with a nonzero element given by $[\bar{x}]$ for any $\bar{x} \in K$ with $v_{K}(\bar{x})<0$.
(c) If $n<0$ and $K$ is perfect, then $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\operatorname{con}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](n)\right)=H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(n)\right)=0$.

Proof. The group $H^{1}(R(n))$ consists of the quotient of the additive group of $R$ by the subgroup of those $x \in R$ for which the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=y-\pi^{n} y^{\sigma} \tag{3.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a solution $y \in R$, so our assertions are all really about the solvability of this equation.
(a) If $n=0$ and $K$ is separably closed, then for each $x \in \Gamma$, there exists $y \in \Gamma$ such that $x \equiv y-y^{q}(\bmod \pi)$. By iterating this construction, we can produce for any $x \in \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ an element $y \in \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ satisfying (3.3.8), such that

$$
v_{m}(y) \geq \min \left\{v_{m}(x), v_{m}(x) / q\right\}
$$

in particular, if $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, then $y \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Moreover, given $x \in \Gamma_{\text {an, con }}$, we can write $x$ as a convergent series of elements of $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, and thus produce a solution of (3.3.8). Hence $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\text {con }}(n)\right)=$ $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\text {an }, \text { con }}(n)\right)=0$.
(b1) This follows at once from Lemma 3.3.3.
(b2) If $n>0$ and $v_{K}$ is trivial, then for any $x \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$, the series

$$
y=\sum_{m=0}^{\infty}\left(\pi^{\{m\}}\right)^{n} x^{\sigma^{m}}
$$

converges $\pi$-adically to a solution of (3.3.8).
(b3) By (b1), it suffices to show that $x=[\bar{x}]$ represents a nonzero element of $H^{1}\left(\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](n)\right)$. By (b2), there exists a unique $y \in \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ satisfying (3.3.8); however, we have $v_{m n}(y)=q^{m} v_{K}(\bar{x})$ for all $m \geq 0$, and so $y \notin \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.
(c) Let $x=\sum_{i}\left[\overline{x_{i}}\right] \pi^{i}$ be the Teichmüller presentation of $x$. Pick $c>0$, and let $z_{1}$ and $z_{2}$ be the sums of $\left[\overline{x_{i}}\right] \pi^{i}$ over those $i$ for which $v_{K}\left(\overline{x_{i}}\right)<c$ and $v_{K}\left(\overline{x_{i}}\right) \geq c$, respectively. Then the sums

$$
\begin{aligned}
& y_{1}=\sum_{m=0}^{\infty}-\left(\pi^{\{-m-1\}}\right)^{n} z_{1}^{\sigma^{-m-1}} \\
& y_{2}=\sum_{m=0}^{\infty}\left(\pi^{\{m\}}\right)^{n} z_{2}^{\sigma^{m}}
\end{aligned}
$$

converge to solutions of $z_{1}=y_{1}-\pi^{n} y_{1}^{\sigma}$ and $z_{2}=y_{2}-\pi^{n} y_{2}^{\sigma}$, respectively. Hence $y=y_{1}+y_{2}$ is a solution of (3.3.8). Moreover, if $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, then $\overline{x_{i}}=0$ for $i$ sufficiently small, so we can choose $c$ to ensure $z_{2}=0$; then $y=y_{1} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

### 3.4 Stability and Semistability

As in [17], we can set up a formal analogy between the study of $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ and the study of stability of vector bundles.

Definition 3.4.1. For $M$ a $\sigma$-module of rank 1 over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ generated by some $\mathbf{v}$, define the degree of $M$, denoted $\operatorname{deg}(M)$, to be the unique integer $n$ such that $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}} \cong \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}(n)$, as provided by Proposition 3.3.2; concretely, $\operatorname{deg}(M)$ is the valuation of the unit via which $F$ acts on a generator of $M$. For a $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ of rank $n$, define $\operatorname{deg}(M)=\operatorname{deg}\left(\wedge^{n} M\right)$. Define $\mu(M)=\operatorname{deg}(M) / \operatorname{rank}(M)$; we refer to $\mu(M)$ as the slope of $M$ (or as the weight of $M$, per the terminology of [17, Section 6]).

Lemma 3.4.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$, and let $N$ be a $\sigma$-submodule of $M$ with $\operatorname{rank}(M)=\operatorname{rank}(N)$. Then $\operatorname{deg}(N) \geq \operatorname{deg}(M)$, with equality if and only if $M=N$; moreover, equality must hold if $v_{K}$ is trivial.

Proof. By taking exterior powers, it suffices to check this for rank $M=$ $\operatorname{rank} N=1$; also, there is no harm in assuming that $K$ is algebraically closed. By Proposition 3.3.2, $M \cong \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}(c)$ and $N \cong \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}(d)$ for some integers $c, d$. By twisting, we may reduce to the case $d=0$. Then by Proposition 3.3.4, we have $0 \geq c$, with equality forced if $v_{K}$ is trivial; moreover, if $c=0$, then $N$ contains a generator which also belongs to $H^{0}(M)$. But every nonzero element of the latter also generates $M$, so $c=0$ implies $M=N$. (Compare [17, Proposition 6.2].)

LEmma 3.4.3. If $0 \rightarrow M_{1} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{2} \rightarrow 0$ is a short exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$, then $\operatorname{deg}(M)=\operatorname{deg}\left(M_{1}\right)+\operatorname{deg}\left(M_{2}\right)$.

Proof. Put $n_{1}=\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{1}\right)$ and $n_{2}=\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{2}\right)$. Then the claim follows from the existence of the isomorphism

$$
\wedge^{n_{1}+n_{2}} M \cong\left(\wedge^{n_{1}} M_{1}\right) \otimes\left(\wedge^{n_{2}} M_{2}\right)
$$

of $\sigma$-modules.
Proposition 3.4.4. Let a be a positive integer, let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$, and let $N$ be a $\sigma^{a}$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$.
(a) $\operatorname{deg}\left([a]_{*} M\right)=a \operatorname{deg}(M)$ and $\operatorname{deg}\left([a]^{*} N\right)=\operatorname{deg}(N)$.
(b) $\operatorname{rank}\left([a]_{*} M\right)=\operatorname{rank}(M)$ and $\operatorname{rank}\left([a]^{*} N\right)=a \operatorname{rank}(N)$.
(c) $\mu\left([a]_{*} M\right)=a \mu(M)$ and $\mu\left([a]^{*} N\right)=\frac{1}{a} \mu(N)$.

Proof. Straightforward (compare [17, Proposition 7.1], but note that the roles of the pullback and pushforward are interchanged here).

Definition 3.4.5. We say a $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ is semistable if $\mu(M) \leq$ $\mu(N)$ for any nonzero $\sigma$-submodule $N$ of $M$. We say $M$ is stable if $\mu(M)<$ $\mu(N)$ for any nonzero proper $\sigma$-submodule $N$ of $M$. Note that the direct sum of semistable $\sigma$-modules of the same slope is also semistable. By Proposition 3.4.4, for any positive integer $a$, if $[a]_{*} M$ is (semi)stable, then $M$ is (semi)stable.

Remark 3.4.6. As noted earlier, the inequalities are reversed from the usual definitions of stability and semistability for vector bundles, because of an overall choice of sign convention.

Remark 3.4.7. Beware that this use of the term "semistable" is only distantly related to its use to describe $p$-adic Galois representations!

Lemma 3.4.8. For any integer $c$ and any positive integer $n$, the $\sigma$-module $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(c)^{\oplus n}$ is semistable of slope $c$.

Proof. There is no harm in assuming that $K$ is algebraically closed, and that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. Let $N$ be a nonzero $\sigma$-submodule of $M$ of rank $d^{\prime}$ and degree $c^{\prime}$. Then

$$
\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left(c^{\prime}\right) \cong \wedge^{d^{\prime}} N \subseteq \wedge^{d^{\prime}} \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}(c)^{\oplus n} \cong \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left(c d^{\prime}\right)^{\oplus\binom{n}{d^{\prime}} .}
$$

In particular, $H^{0}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left(c d^{\prime}-c^{\prime}\right)\right) \neq 0$; by Proposition 3.3.4(b), this implies $c^{\prime} \geq c d^{\prime}$, yielding semistability. (Compare [17, Proposition 6.3(b)].)

Lemma 3.4.9. For any positive integer a and any integer $c$, the $\sigma$-module $[a]^{*}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(c)\right)$ over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ is semistable of rank a, degree $c$, and slope $c / a$. Moreover, if $a$ and $c$ are coprime, then $[a]^{*}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(c)\right)$ is stable.

Proof. By Lemma 3.2.4 and Lemma 3.4.8, $[a]_{*}[a]^{*}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(c)\right)$ is semistable of rank $a$ and slope $c$; as noted in Definition 3.4.5, it follows that $[a]^{*}\left(\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}(c)\right)$ is semistable.
Let $M$ be a nonzero $\sigma$-submodule of $[a]^{*}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(c)\right)$. If $a$ and $c$ are coprime, then $\operatorname{deg}(M)=(c / a) \operatorname{rank}(M)$ is an integer; $\operatorname{since} \operatorname{rank}(M) \leq a$, this is only possible for $\operatorname{rank}(M)=a$. But then Lemma 3.4.2 implies that $\mu(M)>c / a$ unless $M=[a]^{*}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \operatorname{con}}(c)\right)$. We conclude that $[a]^{*}\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}(c)\right)$ is stable. (Compare [17, Proposition 8.2].)

### 3.5 Harder-Narasimhan filtrations

Using the notions of degree and slope, we can make the usual formal construction of Harder-Narasimhan filtrations, with its usual properties.

Definition 3.5.1. Given a multiset $S$ of $n$ real numbers, define the Newton polygon of $S$ to be the graph of the piecewise linear function on $[0, n]$ sending 0 to 0 , whose slope on $[i-1, i]$ is the $i$-th smallest element of $S$; we refer to the point on the graph corresponding to the image of $n$ as the endpoint of the polygon. Conversely, given such a graph, define its slope multiset to be the slopes of the piecewise linear function on $[i-1, i]$ for $i=1, \ldots, n$. We say that the Newton polygon of $S$ lies above the Newton polygon of $S^{\prime}$ if no vertex of the polygon of $S$ lies below the polygon of $S^{\prime}$, and the two polygons have the same endpoint.

Definition 3.5.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$. A semistable filtration of $M$ is an exhaustive filtration $0=M_{0} \subset M_{1} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}=M$ of $M$ by saturated $\sigma$-submodules, such that each successive quotient $M_{i} / M_{i-1}$ is semistable of some slope $s_{i}$. A Harder-Narasimhan filtration (or HN-filtration) of $M$ is a semistable filtration with $s_{1}<\cdots<s_{l}$. An HN-filtration is unique if it exists, as $M_{1}$ can then be characterized as the unique maximal $\sigma$-submodule of $M$ of minimal slope, and so on.

Definition 3.5.3. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$. Given a semistable filtration $0=M_{0} \subset M_{1} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}=M$ of $M$, form the multiset consisting of, for $i=1, \ldots, l$, the slope $\mu\left(M_{i} / M_{i-1}\right)$ with multiplicity $\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{i} / M_{i-1}\right)$. We call this the slope multiset of the filtration, and we call the associated Newton polygon the slope polygon of the filtration. If $M$ admits a HarderNarasimhan filtration, we refer to the slope multiset as the Harder-Narasimhan slope multiset (or HN-slope multiset) of $M$, and to the Newton polygon as the Harder-Narasimhan polygon (or HN-polygon) of $M$.

Proposition 3.5.4. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ admitting an $H N$ filtration. Then the HN-polygon lies above the slope polygon of any semistable filtration of $M$.

Proof. Let $0=M_{0} \subset M_{1} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}=M$ be an HN-filtration, and let $0=M_{0}^{\prime} \subset M_{1}^{\prime} \subset \cdots \subset M_{m}^{\prime}=M$ be a semistable filtration. To prove the
inequality, it suffices to prove that for each of $i=1, \ldots, l$, we can choose $\operatorname{rank}\left(M / M_{i}\right)$ slopes from the slope multiset of the semistable filtration whose sum is greater than or equal to the sum of the greatest $\operatorname{rank}\left(M / M_{i}\right) \mathrm{HN}$-slopes of $M$; note that the latter is just $\operatorname{deg}\left(M / M_{i}\right)$.
For $l=1, \ldots, m$, put

$$
d_{l}=\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{l}^{\prime}+M_{i}\right)-\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{l-1}^{\prime}+M_{i}\right) \leq \operatorname{rank}\left(M_{l}^{\prime} / M_{l-1}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Since $M_{l}^{\prime} / M_{l-1}^{\prime}$ is semistable and $\left(M_{l}^{\prime}+M_{i}\right) /\left(M_{l-1}^{\prime}+M_{i}\right)$ is a quotient of $M_{l}^{\prime} / M_{l-1}^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\mu\left(M_{l}^{\prime} / M_{l-1}^{\prime}\right) \geq \mu\left(\left(M_{l}^{\prime}+M_{i}\right) /\left(M_{l-1}^{\prime}+M_{i}\right)\right)
$$

However, we also have

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{l} d_{l} \mu\left(\left(M_{l}^{\prime}+M_{i}\right) /\left(M_{l-1}^{\prime}+M_{i}\right)\right)=\operatorname{deg}\left(M / M_{i}\right)
$$

yielding the desired inequality.
REmark 3.5.5. We will ultimately prove that every $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ admits a Harder-Narasimhan filtration (Proposition 4.2.5), and that the successive quotients become isomorphic over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an} \text {,con }}^{\text {alg }}$ to direct sums of "standard" $\sigma$-modules of the right slope (Theorems 6.3.3 and 6.4.1). Using the formalism of Harder-Narasimhan filtrations makes it a bit more convenient to articulate the proofs of these assertions.

### 3.6 Descending subobjects

We will ultimately be showing that the formation of a Harder-Narasimhan filtration of a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {an, con }}$ commutes with base change. In order to prove this sort of statement, it will be useful to have a bit of terminology.

Definition 3.6.1. Given an injection $R \hookrightarrow S$ of integral domains equipped with compatible endomorphisms $\sigma$, a $\sigma$-module $M$ over $R$, and a saturated $\sigma$-submodule $N_{S}$ of $M_{S}=M \otimes_{R} S$, we say that $N_{S}$ descends to $R$ if there is a saturated $\sigma$-submodule $N$ of $M$ such that $N_{S}=N \otimes_{R} S$; note that $N$ is unique if it exists, because it can be characterized as $M \cap N_{S}$. Likewise, given a filtration of $M_{S}$, we say the filtration descends to $R$ if it is induced by a filtration of $M$.

The following lemma lets us reduce most descent questions to consideration of submodules of rank 1 .

Lemma 3.6.2. With notation as in Definition 3.6.1, suppose that $R$ is a Bézout domain, and put $d=\operatorname{rank} N_{S}$. Then $N_{S}$ descends to $R$ if and only if $\wedge^{d} N_{S} \subseteq$ $\left(\wedge^{d} M\right)_{S}$ descends to $R$.

Proof. If $N_{S}=N \otimes_{R} S$, then $\wedge^{d} N_{S}=\left(\wedge^{d} N\right) \otimes_{R} S$ descends to $R$. Conversely, if $\wedge^{d} N_{S}=\left(N^{\prime}\right) \otimes_{R} S$, let $N$ be the $\sigma$-submodule of $M$ consisting of those $\mathbf{v} \in M$ such that $\mathbf{v} \wedge \mathbf{w}=0$ for all $\mathbf{w} \in N^{\prime}$. Then $N$ is saturated and $N \otimes_{R} S=N_{S}$, since $N$ is defined by linear conditions which in $M_{S}$ cut out precisely $N_{S}$. Since $R$ is a Bézout domain, this suffices to ensure that $N$ is free; since $N$ is visibly stable under $F, N$ is in fact a $\sigma$-submodule of $M$, and so $N_{S}$ descends to $R$.

## 4 Slope filtrations of $\sigma$-modules

In this chapter, we give a classification of $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{\mathrm{alg}}$, as in $[19$, Chapter 4]. However, this presentation looks somewhat different, mainly because of the formalism introduced in the previous chapter. We also have integrated into a single presentation the cases where $v_{K}$ is nontrivial and where $v_{K}$ is trivial; these are presented separately in [19] (in Chapters 4 and 5 respectively). These two cases do have different flavors, which we will point out as we go along.
Beware that although we have mostly made the exposition self-contained, there remains one notable exception: we do not repeat the key calculation made in [19, Lemma 4.12]. See Lemma 4.3.3 for the relevance of this calculation.
Convention 4.0.1. To lighten the notational load, we write $\mathcal{R}$ for $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}^{\text {alg }}$. Whenever working over $\mathcal{R}$, we also make the harmless assumption that $\pi$ is $\sigma$-invariant.

### 4.1 Standard $\sigma$-modules

Following [17, Section 8], we introduce the standard building blocks into which we will decompose $\sigma$-modules over $\mathcal{R}$.

Definition 4.1.1. Let $c, d$ be coprime integers with $d>0$. Define the $\sigma$-module $M_{c, d}=[d]^{*}(\mathcal{R}(c))$ over $\mathcal{R}$; that is, $M_{c, d}$ is freely generated by $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{d}$ with

$$
F \mathbf{e}_{1}=\mathbf{e}_{2}, \quad \ldots, \quad F \mathbf{e}_{d-1}=\mathbf{e}_{d}, \quad F \mathbf{e}_{d}=\pi^{c} \mathbf{e}_{1}
$$

This $\sigma$-module is stable of slope $c / d$ by Lemma 3.4.9. We say a $\sigma$-module $M$ is standard if it is isomorphic to some $M_{c, d}$; in that case, we say a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{d}$ as above is a standard basis of $M$.
LEMMA 4.1.2. (a) $M_{c, d} \otimes M_{c^{\prime}, d^{\prime}} \cong M_{c^{\prime \prime}, d^{\prime \prime}}^{\oplus d d^{\prime} / d^{\prime \prime}}$, where $c / d+c^{\prime} / d^{\prime}=c^{\prime \prime} / d^{\prime \prime}$ in lowest terms.
(b) $M_{c, d}\left(c^{\prime}\right) \cong M_{c+c^{\prime} d, d}$.
(c) $M_{c, d}^{\vee} \cong M_{-c, d}$.

Proof. To verify (a), it is enough to do so after applying $\left[d d^{\prime}\right]_{*}$ thanks to Lemma 3.2.5. Then the desired isomorphism follows from Lemma 3.2.4. Assertion (b) follows from (a), and (c) follows from the explicit description of $M_{c, d}$ given above. (Compare [17, Proposition 8.3].)

Proposition 4.1.3. Let $c, d$ be coprime integers with $d>0$.
(a) The group $H^{0}\left(M_{c, d}\right)$ is nonzero if and only if $v_{K}$ is nontrivial and $c / d \leq$ 0 , or $v_{K}$ is trivial and $c / d=0$.
(b) The group $H^{1}\left(M_{c, d}\right)$ is nonzero if and only if $v_{K}$ is nontrivial and $c / d>$ 0 .

Proof. These assertions follow from Propositions 3.3.4 and 3.3.7, plus the fact that $H^{i}\left([d]^{*} M\right) \cong H^{i}(M)$ for $i=0,1$.

Corollary 4.1.4. Let $c, c^{\prime}, d, d^{\prime}$ be integers, with $d, d^{\prime}$ positive and $\operatorname{gcd}(c, d)=$ $\operatorname{gcd}\left(c^{\prime}, d^{\prime}\right)=1$.
(a) We have $\operatorname{Hom}\left(M_{c^{\prime}, d^{\prime}}, M_{c, d}\right) \neq 0$ if and only if $v_{K}$ is nontrivial and $c^{\prime} / d^{\prime} \geq$ $c / d$, or $v_{K}$ is trivial and $c^{\prime} / d^{\prime}=c / d$.
(b) We have $\operatorname{Ext}\left(M_{c^{\prime}, d^{\prime}}, M_{c, d}\right) \neq 0$ if and only if $v_{K}$ is nontrivial and $c^{\prime} / d^{\prime}<$ $c / d$.

Remark 4.1.5. One can show that $\operatorname{End}\left(M_{c, d}\right)$ is a division algebra (this can be deduced from the fact that $M_{c, d}$ is stable) and even describe it explicitly, as in [17, Proposition 8.6]. For our purposes, it will be enough to check that $\operatorname{End}\left(M_{c, d}\right)$ is a division algebra after establishing the existence of DieudonnéManin decompositions; see Corollary 4.5.9.

### 4.2 Existence of eigenvectors

In classifying $\sigma$-modules over $\mathcal{R}$, it is useful to employ the language of "eigenvectors".

Definition 4.2.1. Let $d$ be a positive integer. A d-eigenvector (or simply eigenvector if $d=1$ ) of a $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\mathcal{R}$ is a nonzero element $\mathbf{v}$ of $M$ such that $F^{d} \mathbf{v}=\pi^{c} \mathbf{v}$ for some integer $c$. We refer to the quotient $c / d$ as the slope of $\mathbf{v}$.

Proposition 4.2.2. Suppose that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. Then every nontrivial $\sigma$ module over $\mathcal{R}$ contains an eigenvector.

Proof. The calculation is basically that of [19, Proposition 4.8]: use the fact that $F$ makes things with "very positive partial valuations" converge better whereas $F^{-1}$ makes things with "very negative partial valuations" converge better. However, one can simplify the final analysis a bit, as is done in [17, Theorem 4.1].
We first set some notation as in [19, Proposition 4.8]. Let $M$ be a nontrivial $\sigma$-module over $\mathcal{R}$. Choose a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of $M$, and define the invertible $n \times n$ matrix $A$ over $\mathcal{R}$ by the equation $F \mathbf{e}_{j}=\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{e}_{i}$. Choose $r>0$ such that $A$ and its inverse have entries in $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}^{\mathrm{alg}}$. Choose $\epsilon>0$, and choose an
integer $c$ with $c \leq \min \left\{w_{r}(A), w_{r}\left(\left(A^{-1}\right)^{\sigma^{-1}}\right)\right\}-\epsilon$. Choose an integer $m>c$ such that the interval

$$
\left(\frac{-c+m}{(q-1) r}, \frac{q(c+m)}{(q-1) r}\right)
$$

is nonempty (true for $m$ sufficiently large), and choose $d$ in the intersection of that interval with the image of $v_{K}$. (The choice of $d$ is possible because $v_{K}$ is nontrivial and the residue field of $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$ is algebraically closed, so the image of $v_{K}$ contains a copy of $\mathbb{Q}$ and hence is dense in $\mathbb{R}$.)
For an interval $I \subseteq(0, r]$, define the functions $a, b: \Gamma_{I} \rightarrow \Gamma_{I}$ as follows. For $x \in$ $\Gamma_{I}$, let $\sum_{j \in \mathbb{Z}}\left[\overline{x_{j}}\right] \pi^{j}$ be the Teichmüller presentation of $x$ (as in Definition 2.5.1). Let $a(x)$ and $b(x)$ be the sums of $\left[\overline{x_{j}}\right] \pi^{j}$ over those $j$ with $v_{K}\left(\overline{x_{j}}\right)<d$ and $v_{K}\left(\overline{x_{j}}\right) \geq d$, respectively. We may think of $a$ and $b$ as splitting $x$ into "negative" and "positive" terms. (This decomposition shares its canonicality with the corresponding decomposition in [17, Theorem 4.1] but not with the one in [19, Proposition 4.8].)
For $I \subseteq(0, r]$, let $M_{I}$ denote the $\Gamma_{I}$-span of the $\mathbf{e}_{i}$. For $\mathbf{v} \in M_{I}$, write $\mathbf{v}=$ $\sum_{i} x_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i}$, and for $s \in I$, define

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{n, s}(\mathbf{v}) & =\min _{i}\left\{v_{n, s}\left(x_{i}\right)\right\} \\
w_{s}(\mathbf{v}) & =\min _{i}\left\{w_{s}\left(x_{i}\right)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Put $a(\mathbf{v})=\sum_{i} a\left(x_{i}\right) \mathbf{e}_{i}$ and $b(\mathbf{v})=\sum_{i} b\left(x_{i}\right) \mathbf{e}_{i}$; then by the choice of $d$, we have for $\mathbf{v} \in M_{(0, r]}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{r}\left(\pi^{m} F^{-1}(a(\mathbf{v}))\right) & \geq w_{r}(a(\mathbf{v}))+\epsilon \\
w_{r}\left(\pi^{-m} F(b(\mathbf{v}))\right) & \geq w_{r}(b(\mathbf{v}))+\epsilon
\end{aligned}
$$

Put

$$
f(\mathbf{v})=\pi^{-m} b(\mathbf{v})-F^{-1}(a(\mathbf{v})) .
$$

If $\mathbf{v} \in M_{(0, r]}$ is such that $\mathbf{w}=F \mathbf{v}-\pi^{m} \mathbf{v}$ also lies in $M_{(0, r]}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
F(\mathbf{v}+f(\mathbf{w}))-\pi^{m} & (\mathbf{v}+f(\mathbf{w})) \\
& =F(f(\mathbf{w}))-\pi^{m} f(\mathbf{w})+\mathbf{w} \\
& =F\left(\pi^{-m} b(\mathbf{w})\right)-a(\mathbf{w})-b(\mathbf{w})+\pi^{m} F^{-1}(a(\mathbf{w}))+\mathbf{w} \\
& =\pi^{-m} F(b(\mathbf{w}))+\pi^{m} F^{-1}(a(\mathbf{w}))
\end{aligned}
$$

lies in $M_{(0, r]}$ as well, and

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{r}(f(\mathbf{w})) & \geq w_{r}\left(\pi^{-m} \mathbf{w}\right) \\
w_{r}\left(F(\mathbf{v}+f(\mathbf{w}))-\pi^{m}(\mathbf{v}+f(\mathbf{w}))\right) & \geq w_{r}(\mathbf{w})+\epsilon
\end{aligned}
$$

Now define a sequence $\left\{\mathbf{v}_{l}\right\}_{l=0}^{\infty}$ in $M_{(0, r]}$ as follows. Pick $\bar{x} \in K$ with $v_{K}(\bar{x})=d$, and set

$$
\mathbf{v}_{0}=\pi^{-m}[\bar{x}] \mathbf{e}_{1}+\left[\bar{x}^{1 / q}\right] F^{-1} \mathbf{e}_{1} .
$$

Given $\mathbf{v}_{l} \in M_{(0, r]}$, set

$$
\mathbf{w}_{l}=F \mathbf{v}_{l}-\pi^{m} \mathbf{v}_{l}, \quad \mathbf{v}_{l+1}=\mathbf{v}_{l}+f\left(\mathbf{w}_{l}\right) .
$$

We calculated above that $\mathbf{w}_{l} \in M_{(0, r]}$ implies $\mathbf{w}_{l+1} \in M_{(0, r]} ;$ since $\mathbf{w}_{0} \in M_{(0, r]}$ evidently, we have $\mathbf{w}_{l} \in M_{(0, r]}$ for all $l$, so $\mathbf{v}_{l+1} \in M_{(0, r]}$ and the iteration continues. Moreover,

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{r}\left(\mathbf{v}_{l+1}-\mathbf{v}_{l}\right) & \geq w_{r}\left(\pi^{-m} \mathbf{w}_{l}\right) \\
w_{r}\left(\mathbf{w}_{l}\right) & =w_{r}\left(F\left(\mathbf{v}_{l-1}+f(\mathbf{w})\right)-\pi^{m}\left(\mathbf{v}_{l-1}+f(\mathbf{w})\right)\right) \\
& \geq w_{r}\left(\mathbf{w}_{l-1}\right)+\epsilon
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $\mathbf{w}_{l} \rightarrow 0$ and $f\left(\mathbf{w}_{l}\right) \rightarrow 0$ under $w_{r}$ as $l \rightarrow \infty$, so the $\mathbf{v}_{l}$ converge to a limit $\mathbf{v} \in M_{[r, r]}$.
We now check that $\mathbf{v} \neq 0$. Since $w_{r}\left(\mathbf{w}_{l+1}\right) \geq w_{r}\left(\mathbf{w}_{l}\right)+\epsilon$ for all $l$, we certainly have $w_{r}\left(\mathbf{w}_{l}\right) \geq w_{r}\left(\mathbf{w}_{0}\right)$ for all $l$, and hence $w_{r}\left(\mathbf{v}_{l+1}-\mathbf{v}_{l}\right) \geq w_{r}\left(\pi^{-m} \mathbf{w}_{0}\right)$. To compute $w_{r}\left(\mathbf{w}_{0}\right)$, note that $w_{r}\left(\pi^{-m}[\bar{x}] \mathbf{e}_{1}\right)=d r-m$, whereas

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{r}\left(\left[\bar{x}^{1 / q}\right] F^{-1} \mathbf{e}_{1}\right) & \geq d r / q+c \\
& >d r-m
\end{aligned}
$$

by the choice of $d$. Hence $w_{r}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}\right)=d r-m$. On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{r}\left(\pi^{-m} \mathbf{w}_{0}\right) & =w_{r}\left(\pi^{-m} F \mathbf{v}_{0}-\mathbf{v}_{0}\right) \\
& =w_{r}\left(\pi^{-2 m}\left[\bar{x}^{q}\right] F \mathbf{e}_{1}-\left[\bar{x}^{1 / q}\right] F^{-1} \mathbf{e}_{1}\right) \\
& \geq \min \{d q r+c-2 m, d r / q+c\}
\end{aligned}
$$

The second term is strictly greater than $d r-m$ as above, while the first term equals $d r-m$ plus $d r(q-1)+c-m$, and the latter is positive again by the choice of $d$. Thus $w_{r}\left(\pi^{-m} \mathbf{w}_{0}\right)>w_{r}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}\right)$, and so $w_{r}\left(\mathbf{v}_{l+1}-\mathbf{v}_{l}\right)>w_{r}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}\right)$; in particular, $w_{r}(\mathbf{v})=w_{r}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}\right)$ and so $\mathbf{v} \neq 0$.
Since the $\mathbf{v}_{l}$ converge to $\mathbf{v}$ in $M_{[r, r]}$, the $F \mathbf{v}_{l}$ converge to $F \mathbf{v}$ in $M_{[r / q, r / q]}$. On the other hand, $F \mathbf{v}_{l}=\mathbf{w}_{l}+\pi^{m} \mathbf{v}_{l}$, so the $F \mathbf{v}_{l}$ converge to $\pi^{m} \mathbf{v}$ in $M_{[r, r]}$. In particular, the $F \mathbf{v}_{l}$ form a Cauchy sequence under $w_{s}$ for $s=r / q$ and $s=r$, hence also for all $s \in[r / q, r]$, and the limit in $M_{[r / q, r]}$ must equal both $F \mathbf{v}$ and $\pi^{m} \mathbf{v}$. Therefore $\mathbf{v} \in M_{[r / q, r]}$ and $F \mathbf{v}=\pi^{m} \mathbf{v}$ in $M_{[r / q, r / q]}$. But now by induction on $i, \mathbf{v} \in M_{\left[r / q^{i}, r\right]}$ for all $i$, so $\mathbf{v} \in M_{(0, r]} \subset M$ is a nonzero eigenvector, as desired.

Lemma 4.2.3. Suppose that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module of rank $n$ over $\mathcal{R}$.
(a) There exists an integer $c_{0}$ such that for any integer $c \geq c_{0}$, there exists an injection $\mathcal{R}(c)^{\oplus n} \hookrightarrow M$.
(b) There exists an integer $c_{1}$ such that for any integer $c \leq c_{1}$, there exists an injection $M \hookrightarrow \mathcal{R}(c)^{\oplus n}$.

Proof. By taking duals, we may reduce (b) to (a). We prove (a) by induction on $n$, with empty base case $n=0$. By Proposition 4.2.2, there exists an eigenvector of $M$; the saturated span of this eigenvector is a rank $1 \sigma$-submodule of $M$, necessarily isomorphic to some $\mathcal{R}(m)$ by Proposition 3.3.2. By the induction hypothesis, we can choose $c_{0} \geq m$ so that $\mathcal{R}\left(c_{0}\right)^{n-1}$ injects into $M / \mathcal{R}(m)$. Let $N$ be the preimage of $\mathcal{R}\left(c_{0}\right)^{n-1}$ in $M$; then there exists an exact sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow \mathcal{R}(m) \rightarrow N \rightarrow \mathcal{R}\left(c_{0}\right)^{n-1} \rightarrow 0
$$

which splits by Corollary 4.1.4. Thus $N \cong \mathcal{R}(m) \oplus \mathcal{R}\left(c_{0}\right)^{n-1} \subseteq M$, and $\mathcal{R}(m)$ contains a copy of $\mathcal{R}\left(c_{0}\right)$ by Corollary 4.1.4. This yields the desired result by Corollary 4.1.4 again.

Proposition 4.2.4. For any nonzero $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$, the slopes of all nonzero $\sigma$-submodules of $N$ are bounded below. Moreover, there is a nonzero $\sigma$-submodule of $N$ of minimal slope, and any such $\sigma$-submodule is semistable.

Proof. To check the first assertion, we may assume (by enlarging $K$ as needed) that $K$ is algebraically closed, so that $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}=\mathcal{R}$, and that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. By Lemma 4.2.3, there exists an injection $M \hookrightarrow \mathcal{R}(c)^{\oplus n}$ for some $c$, where $n=\operatorname{rank} M$. By Lemma 3.4.8, it follows that $\mu(N) \geq c$ for any $\sigma$-submodule $N$ of $M$, yielding the first assertion.
As for the second assertion, the slopes of $\sigma$-submodules of $M$ form a discrete subset of $\mathbb{Q}$, because their denominators are bounded above by $n$. Hence this set has a least element, yielding the remaining assertions.

Proposition 4.2.5. Every $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ admits a Harder-Narasimhan filtration.

Proof. Let $M$ be a nontrivial $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$. By Proposition 4.2.4, the set of slopes of nonzero $\sigma$-submodules of $M$ has a least element $s_{1}$. Suppose that $N_{1}, N_{2}$ are $\sigma$-submodules of $M$ with $\mu\left(N_{1}\right)=\mu\left(N_{2}\right)=s_{1}$; then the internal sum $N_{1}+N_{2}$ is a quotient of the direct sum $N_{1} \oplus N_{2}$. By Proposition 4.2.4, each of $N_{1}$ and $N_{2}$ is semistable, as then is $N_{1} \oplus N_{2}$. Hence $\mu\left(N_{1}+N_{2}\right) \leq s_{1}$; by the minimality of $s_{1}$, we have $\mu\left(N_{1}+N_{2}\right)=s_{1}$. Consequently, the set of $\sigma$-submodules of $M$ of slope $s_{1}$ has a maximal element $M_{1}$. Repeating this argument with $M$ replaced by $M / M_{1}$, and so on, yields a Harder-Narasimhan filtration.

Remark 4.2.6. Running this argument is a severe obstacle to working with spherically complete coefficients (as suggested by Remark 2.3.10), as it is no longer clear that there exists a minimum slope among the $\sigma$-submodules of a given $\sigma$-module.

Remark 4.2.7. It may be possible to simplify the calculations in this section by using Lemma 6.1.1; we have not looked thoroughly into this possibility.

### 4.3 More eigenvectors

We now give a crucial refinement of the conclusion of Proposition 4.2.2 by extracting an eigenvector of a specific slope in a key situation. This is essentially [19, Proposition 4.15]; compare also [17, Proposition 9.1]. Beware that we are omitting one particularly unpleasant part of the calculation; see Lemma 4.3.3 below.
We start by identifying $H^{0}(\mathcal{R}(-1))$.
Lemma 4.3.1. The map

$$
\bar{y} \mapsto \sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}\left[\bar{y}^{q^{-i}}\right] \pi^{i}
$$

induces a bijection $\mathfrak{m}_{K} \rightarrow H^{0}(\mathcal{R}(-1))$, where $\mathfrak{m}_{K}$ denotes the subset of $K$ on which $v_{K}$ is positive.
Proof. On one hand, for $v_{K}(\bar{y})>0$, the sum $y=\sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}\left[\bar{y}^{q^{-i}}\right] \pi^{i}$ converges and satisfies $y^{\sigma}=\pi y$. Conversely, if $y^{\sigma}=\pi y$, comparing the Teichmüller presentations of $y^{\sigma}$ and of $\pi y$ forces $y$ to assume the desired form.

We next give a "positioning argument" for elements of $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$, following [19, Lemmas 4.13 and 4.14].

Lemma 4.3.2. For $m$ a positive integer, every nonzero element of $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$ is represented by some $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ with $v_{n}(x)=v_{m-1}(x)$ for $n \geq m$. Moreover, we can ensure that for each $n \geq 0$, either $v_{n}(x)=\infty$ or $v_{n}(x)<0$.
Proof. We first verify that each element of $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$ is represented by an element of $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. If $v_{n}(x) \geq 0$ for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, then the sum $y=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} x^{\sigma^{i}} \pi^{m i}$ converges in $\mathcal{R}$ and satisfies $y-\pi^{m} y^{\sigma}=x$, so $x$ represents the zero class in $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$. In other words, if $x \in \mathcal{R}$ has plus-minus-zero representation $x_{+}+x_{-}+x_{0}$, then $x$ and $x_{-}$represent the same class in $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$, and visibly $x_{-} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.
We next verify that each element of $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$ is represented by an element $x$ of $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with $\inf _{n}\left\{v_{n}(x)\right\}>-\infty$. Given any $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, let $x=\sum_{i}\left[\overline{x_{i}}\right] \pi^{i}$ be the Teichmüller representation of $x$. For each $i$, let $c_{i}$ be the smallest nonnegative integer such that $q^{-c_{i}} v_{K}\left(\overline{x_{i}}\right) \geq-1$, and put

$$
y_{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{c_{i}}\left[\bar{x}^{q^{-j}}\right] \pi^{i-m j}
$$

since $c_{i}$ grows only logarithmically in $i, i-m c_{i} \rightarrow \infty$ and the sum $\sum_{i} y_{i}$ converges $\pi$-adically. Moreover,

$$
\limsup _{i \rightarrow \infty} \min _{1 \leq j \leq c_{i}}\left\{-q^{-j} v_{0}\left(\overline{x_{i}}\right) /(i-m j)\right\}
$$

is finite, because the same is true for each of $q^{-j}$ (clear), $-v_{0}\left(\overline{x_{i}}\right) / i$ (by the definition of $\mathcal{R}$ ), and $i /\left(i-m j\right.$ ) (because $c_{i}$ grows logarithmically in $i$ ). Hence
the sum $y=\sum_{i} y_{i}$ actually converges in $\mathcal{R}$; if we set $x^{\prime}=x-\pi^{m} y^{\sigma}+y$, then $x$ and $x^{\prime}$ represent the same class in $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$. However,

$$
x^{\prime}=\sum_{i}\left[{\overline{x_{i}}}^{q^{-c_{i}}}\right] \pi^{i-m c_{i}}
$$

satisfies $v_{n}\left(x^{\prime}\right) \geq-1$ for all $n$.
Since $x$ and $\pi^{m} x^{\sigma}$ represent the same element of $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$, we can also say that each element of $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$ is represented by an element $x$ of $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ with $\inf _{n}\left\{v_{n}(x)\right\}>-\infty$. Given such an $x$, put $h=\inf _{n}\left\{v_{n}(x)\right\}$; we attempt to construct a sequence $x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots$ with the following properties:
(a) $x_{0}=x$;
(b) each $x_{l}$ generates the same element of $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$ as does $x$;
(c) $x_{l} \equiv 0\left(\bmod \pi^{l m}\right) ;$
(d) for each $n$ and $l, v_{n}\left(x_{l}\right) \geq h$.

We do this as follows. Given $x_{l}$, let $\sum_{i=l m}^{\infty}\left[\overline{x_{l, i}}\right] \pi^{i}$ be the Teichmüller presentation of $x_{l}$, and put

$$
u_{l}=\sum_{i=l m}^{l m+m-1}\left[\overline{x_{l, i}}\right] \pi^{i}
$$

If $v_{l m+m-1}\left(x_{l}\right) \geq h / q$, put $x_{l+1}=x_{l}-u_{l}+\pi^{m} u_{l}^{\sigma}$; otherwise, leave $x_{l+1}$ undefined.
If $x_{l}$ is defined for each $l$, then set $y=\sum_{l=0}^{\infty} u_{l}$; this sum converges in $\mathcal{R}$, and its limit satisfies $x-y+\pi^{m} y^{\sigma}=0$. Hence in this case, $x$ represents the trivial class in $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$.
On the other hand, if we are able to define $x_{l}$ but not $x_{l+1}$, put

$$
\begin{aligned}
& y=x_{l}-u_{l} \\
& z=\pi^{-(l+1) m} y^{\sigma^{-l-1}}+\pi^{-l m} u_{l}^{\sigma^{-l}}
\end{aligned}
$$

then $x$ and $z$ represent the same class in $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$. Moreover, $h / q>v_{n}(u)$ and $v_{n}(y) \geq h$ for all $n$, so $h q^{-l-1}>v_{n}\left(\pi^{-l m} u_{l}^{\sigma^{-l}}\right)$ and $v_{n}\left(\pi^{-(l+1) m} y^{\sigma^{-l-1}}\right) \geq$ $h q^{-l-1}$; consequently $v_{n}(z)=v_{m-1}(z)$ for $n \geq m$. In addition, we can pass from $z$ to the minus part $z_{-}$of its plus-minus-zero representation (since $z$ and $z_{-}$represent the same class in $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$, as noted above) to ensure that $v_{n}\left(z_{-}\right)$ is either infinite or negative for all $n \geq 0$. We conclude that every nonzero class in $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(m))$ has a representative of the desired form.

Lemma 4.3.3. Let $d$ be a positive integer. For any $x \in H^{1}\left([d]^{*}(\mathcal{R}(d+1))\right)$, there exists $y \in H^{0}(\mathcal{R}(-1))$ nonzero such that $x$ and $y$ pair to zero in $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(-1) \otimes$ $\left.[d]^{*}(\mathcal{R}(d+1))\right)=H^{1}\left([d]^{*}(\mathcal{R}(1))\right)$.

Proof. Identify $H^{1}\left([d]^{*}(\mathcal{R}(d+1))\right)$ and $H^{1}\left([d]^{*}(\mathcal{R}(1))\right)$ with $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(d+1))$ and $H^{1}(\mathcal{R}(1))$, respectively, where the modules in the latter cases are $\sigma^{d}$-modules. Then the question can be stated as follows: for any $x \in \mathcal{R}$, there exist $y, z \in \mathcal{R}$ with $y$ nonzero, such that

$$
y^{\sigma}=\pi y, \quad x y=z-\pi z^{\sigma^{d}}
$$

By Lemma 4.3.2, we may assume that $x \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ and that $v_{n}(x)=v_{d}(x)<0$ for $n>d$. In this case, the claim follows from a rather involved calculation [19, Lemma 4.12] which we will not repeat here. (For a closely related calculation, see [17, Proposition 9.5].)

Proposition 4.3.4. Assume that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. For $d$ a positive integer, suppose that

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{1, d} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{-1,1} \rightarrow 0
$$

is a short exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules over $\mathcal{R}$. Then $M$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 .

Proof. The short exact sequence corresponds to a class in

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{Ext}\left(M_{-1,1}, M_{1, d}\right) & \cong H^{1}\left(M_{1,1} \otimes M_{1, d}\right) \\
& \cong H^{1}\left(M_{d+1, d}\right) \\
& \cong H^{1}\left([d]^{*}(\mathcal{R}(d+1))\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

From the snake lemma, we obtain an exact sequence

$$
H^{0}(M) \rightarrow H^{0}\left(M_{-1,1}\right)=H^{0}(\mathcal{R}(-1)) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(M_{1, d}\right)=H^{1}\left([d]^{*} \mathcal{R}(1)\right),
$$

in which the second map (the connecting homomorphism) coincides with the pairing with the given class in $H^{1}\left([d]^{*}(\mathcal{R}(d+1))\right)$. By Lemma 4.3.3, this homomorphism is not injective; hence $H^{0}(M) \neq 0$, as desired.

Corollary 4.3.5. Assume that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. For $d$ a positive integer, suppose that

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{1,1} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{-1, d} \rightarrow 0
$$

is a short exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules over $\mathcal{R}$. Then $M^{\vee}$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 .

Proof. Dualize Proposition 4.3.4.
Corollary 4.3.6. Assume that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. For $c, c^{\prime}, c^{\prime \prime}$ integers with $c+c^{\prime} \leq 2 c^{\prime \prime}$, suppose that

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{c, 1} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{c^{\prime}, 1} \rightarrow 0
$$

is a short exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules over $\mathcal{R}$. Then $M$ contains an eigenvector of slope $c^{\prime \prime}$.

Proof. By twisting, we may reduce to the case $c^{\prime \prime}=0$. If $c \leq 0$, then already $M_{c, 1}$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 by Corollary 4.1.4, so we may assume $c \geq 0$. Since $c+c^{\prime} \leq 0$, by Corollary 4.1.4, we can find a copy of $M_{-c, 1}$ within $M_{c^{\prime}, 1}$; taking the preimage of $M_{-c, 1}$ within $M$ allows us to reduce to the case $c^{\prime}=-c$.
We treat the cases $c \geq 0$ by induction, with base case $c=0$ already treated. If $c>0$, then twisting yields an exact sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{c-1,1} \rightarrow M(-1) \rightarrow M_{-c-1,1} \rightarrow 0
$$

By Corollary 4.1.4, we can choose a submodule of $M_{-c-1,1}$ isomorphic to $M_{-c+1,1}$; let $N$ be its inverse image in $M(-1)$. Applying the induction hypothesis to the sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{c-1,1} \rightarrow N \rightarrow M_{-c+1,1} \rightarrow 0
$$

yields an eigenvector of $N$ of slope 0 , and hence an eigenvector of $M$ of slope 1. Let $P$ be the saturated span of that eigenvector; it is isomorphic to $M_{m, 1}$ for some $m$ by Proposition 3.3.2, and we must have $m \leq 1$ by Corollary 4.1.4. If $m \leq 0, M$ has an eigenvector of slope 0 , so suppose instead that $m=1$. We then have an exact sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow P \cong M_{1,1} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M / P \rightarrow 0
$$

in which $M / P$, which has rank 1 and degree -1 (by Lemma 3.4.3), is isomorphic to $M_{-1,1}$ by Proposition 3.3.2. Applying Proposition 4.3.4 now yields the desired result. (Compare [17, Corollary 9.2].)

### 4.4 Existence of standard submodules

We now run the induction setup of [17, Theorem 11.1] to produce standard submodules of a $\sigma$-module of small slope.

Definition 4.4.1. For a given integer $n \geq 1$, let $\left(\mathrm{A}_{n}\right)$, $\left(\mathrm{B}_{n}\right)$ denote the following statements about $n$.
$\left(\mathrm{A}_{n}\right)$ Let $a$ be any positive integer, and let $M$ be any $\sigma^{a}$-module over $\mathcal{R}$. If $\operatorname{rank}(M) \leq n$ and $\operatorname{deg}(M) \leq 0$, then $M$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 .
$\left(\mathrm{B}_{n}\right)$ Let $a$ be any positive integer, and let $M$ be any $\sigma^{a}$-module over $\mathcal{R}$. If $\operatorname{rank}(M) \leq n$, then $M$ contains a saturated $\sigma^{a}$-submodule which is standard of slope $\leq \mu(M)$.

Note that if $v_{K}$ is nontrivial, both $\left(\mathrm{A}_{1}\right)$ and $\left(\mathrm{B}_{1}\right)$ hold thanks to Proposition 3.3.2.

Lemma 4.4.2. Assume that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. For $n \geq 2$, if $\left(A_{n-1}\right)$ and $\left(B_{n-1}\right)$ hold, then $\left(A_{n}\right)$ holds.

Proof. It suffices to show that if $M$ is a $\sigma^{a}$-module over $\mathcal{R}$ with $\operatorname{rank}(M)=n$ and $\operatorname{deg}(M) \leq 0$, then $M$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 ; after twisting, we may reduce to the case $1-n \leq \operatorname{deg}(M) \leq 0$. Suppose on the contrary that no such eigenvector exists; by Corollary 4.1.4, $M$ then contains no eigenvector of any nonpositive slope.
On the other hand, by Proposition 4.2.2, $M$ contains an eigenvector; in particular, $M$ contains a saturated $\sigma^{a}$-submodule of rank 1. By Proposition 3.3.2, we thus have an exact sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{c, 1} \rightarrow M \rightarrow N \rightarrow 0
$$

for some integer $c$, which by hypothesis must be positive.
Choose $c$ as small as possible; then $\operatorname{deg}(N)=\operatorname{deg}(M)-c \leq 0$ by Lemma 3.4.3, so by $\left(\mathrm{A}_{n-1}\right), N$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 . That is, $N$ contains a $\sigma^{a}{ }_{-}$ submodule isomorphic to $M_{0,1}$; let $M^{\prime}$ be the preimage in $M$ of that submodule. We then have an exact sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{c, 1} \rightarrow M^{\prime} \rightarrow M_{0,1} \rightarrow 0
$$

By Corollary 4.3.6, $M^{\prime}$ contains an eigenvector of slope $\lceil c / 2\rceil$. By the minimality of the choice of $c$, we must have $c \leq\lceil c / 2\rceil$, or $c=1$.
Put $c^{\prime}=\operatorname{deg}(M)-1=\operatorname{deg}(N)$, so that $c^{\prime}<0$. By $\left(\mathrm{B}_{n-1}\right), N$ contains a saturated $\sigma^{a}$-submodule $P$ which is standard of slope $\leq c^{\prime} /(n-1)$; let $P^{\prime}$ be the preimage in $M$ of that $\sigma^{a}$-submodule. If $\operatorname{rank}(P)<n-1$, then $\operatorname{deg}\left(P^{\prime}\right) \leq$ $1+\operatorname{rank}(P)\left(c^{\prime} /(n-1)\right)<1$; since $\operatorname{deg}\left(P^{\prime}\right)$ is an integer, we have $\operatorname{deg}\left(P^{\prime}\right) \leq 0$. By $\left(\mathrm{A}_{n-1}\right), P^{\prime}$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 , contradicting our hypothesis. If $\operatorname{rank}(P)=n-1$, we have an exact sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{1,1} \rightarrow P^{\prime} \rightarrow P \cong M_{c^{\prime \prime}, n-1} \rightarrow 0
$$

for some $c^{\prime \prime} \leq-1$. By Corollary 4.1.4, there is a nonzero homomorphism $M_{-1, n-1} \rightarrow M_{c^{\prime \prime}, n-1}$; if its image has rank $<n-1$, then again ( $\mathrm{A}_{n-1}$ ) forces $P^{\prime}$ to contain an eigenvector of slope 0 , contrary to assumption. Hence $M_{c^{\prime \prime}, n-1}$ contains a copy of $M_{-1, n-1}$; choose such a copy and let $P^{\prime \prime}$ be its inverse image in $P^{\prime}$. By Corollary 4.3.5, $\left(P^{\prime \prime}\right)^{\vee}$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 , and hence a primitive eigenvector of slope at most 0 ; this eigenvector corresponds to a rank $n-1$ submodule of $P^{\prime \prime}$ of slope at most 0 . By $\left(\mathrm{A}_{n-1}\right), P^{\prime \prime}$ contains an eigenvector of slope 0 , contradicting our hypothesis.
In any case, our hypothesis that $M$ contains no eigenvector of slope 0 has been contradicted, yielding the desired result.

Lemma 4.4.3. Assume that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. For $n \geq 2$, if $\left(A_{n}\right)$ and $\left(B_{n-1}\right)$ hold, then ( $B_{n}$ ) holds.

Proof. Let $M$ be a $\sigma^{a}$-module of rank $n$ and degree $c$. Put $b=n / \operatorname{gcd}(n, c)$; then by $\left(\mathrm{A}_{n}\right)$ applied after twisting, $[b]_{*} M$ (which has rank $n$ and degree $b c$,
by Proposition 3.4.4) has an eigenvector of slope $b c / n$. That is, $M$ has a $b$ eigenvector $\mathbf{v}$ of slope $c / n$; this gives a nontrivial map $f: M_{b c / n, b} \rightarrow M$ sending a standard basis to $\mathbf{v}, F \mathbf{v}, \ldots, F^{b-1} \mathbf{v}$. Let $N$ be the saturated span of the image of $f$, and put $m=\operatorname{rank} N$. Then $\wedge^{m} N$ admits a $b$-eigenvector of slope $\mathrm{cm} / n$, so by Corollary 4.1.4, the slope of $N$ is at most $c / n$. If $m<n$, we may apply $\left(\mathrm{B}_{n-1}\right)$ to $N$ to obtain the desired result.
Suppose instead that $m=n$, which also implies $b=n$ since necessarily $m \leq$ $b \leq n$. Then the map $f$ is injective, so its image has slope $c / n$. By Lemma 3.4.2, $f$ must in fact be surjective; thus $M \cong M_{c, n}$, as desired.

### 4.5 Dieudonné-Manin decompositions

Definition 4.5.1. A Dieudonné-Manin decomposition of a $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\mathcal{R}$ is a direct sum decomposition $M=\oplus_{i=1}^{m} M_{c_{i}, d_{i}}$ of $M$ into standard $\sigma$ submodules. The slope multiset of such a decomposition is the union of the multisets consisting of $c_{i} / d_{i}$ with multiplicity $d_{i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, m$.

Remark 4.5.2. If $M$ admits a Dieudonné-Manin decomposition, then $M$ admits a basis of $n$-eigenvectors for $n=(\operatorname{rank} M)!$; more precisely, any basis of $H^{0}\left([n]_{*} M\right)$ over the fixed field of $\sigma^{n}$ gives a basis of $[n]_{*} M$ over $\mathcal{R}$. The slopes of these $n$-eigenvectors coincide with the slope multiset of the decomposition.

Proposition 4.5.3. Assume that $v_{K}$ is nontrivial. Then every $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\mathcal{R}$ admits a Dieudonné-Manin decomposition.
Proof. We first show that every semistable $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\mathcal{R}$ is isomorphic to a direct sum of standard $\sigma$-submodules of slope $\mu(M)$. We see this by induction on $\operatorname{rank}(M)$; by Lemmas 4.4.2 and 4.4.3, we have $\left(\mathrm{B}_{n}\right)$ for all $n$, so $M$ contains a saturated $\sigma$-submodule $N$ which is standard of some slope $\leq \mu(M)$. Since $M$ has been assumed semistable, we have $\mu(N) \geq \mu(M)$; hence $\mu(N)=\mu(M)$, and $M / N$ is also semistable. By the induction hypothesis, $M / N$ splits as a direct sum of standard $\sigma$-submodules of slope $\mu(M)$; then by Corollary 4.1.4, the exact sequence

$$
0 \rightarrow N \rightarrow M \rightarrow M / N \rightarrow 0
$$

splits. This yields the desired result.
In the general case, by Proposition 4.2.5, $M$ has an HN-filtration $0=M_{0} \subset$ $M_{1} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}=M$, with each successive quotient $M_{i} / M_{i-1}$ semistable of slope $s_{i}$, and $s_{1}<\cdots<s_{l}$. By the above, $M_{i} / M_{i-1}$ admits a DieudonnéManin decomposition with all slopes $s_{i}$; the filtration then splits thanks to Corollary 4.1.4. Hence $M$ admits a Dieudonné-Manin decomposition.

We will use the case of $v_{K}$ nontrivial to establish the existence of DieudonnéManin decompositions also when $v_{K}$ is trivial.

Definition 4.5.4. For $R$ a (commutative) ring, let $R\left(\left(t^{\mathbb{Q}}\right)\right)$ denote the Hahn-Mal'cev-Neumann algebra of generalized power series $\sum_{i \in \mathbb{Q}} c_{i} t^{i}$, where each
$c_{i} \in R$ and the set of $i \in \mathbb{Q}$ with $c_{i} \neq 0$ is well-ordered (has no infinite decreasing subsequence); these series form a ring under formal series multiplication, with a natural valuation $v$ given by $v\left(\sum_{i} c_{i} t^{i}\right)=\min \left\{i: c_{i} \neq 0\right\}$. For $R$ an algebraically closed field, $R\left(\left(t^{\mathbb{Q}}\right)\right)$ is also algebraically closed; see [31, Chapter 13] for this and other properties of these algebras.

Lemma 4.5.5. Suppose that $k$ is algebraically closed and that $K=k\left(\left(t^{\mathbb{Q}}\right)\right)$. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ such that $M \otimes \mathcal{R}$ admits a basis of eigenvectors. Then any such basis is a basis of $M$.

Proof. We may identify $\Gamma^{K}$ with the $\pi$-adic completion of $\mathcal{O}\left(\left(t^{\mathbb{Q}}\right)\right)$. In so doing, elements of $\mathcal{R}$ can be viewed as formal sums $\sum_{i \in \mathbb{Q}} c_{i} t^{i}$ with $c_{i} \in \mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.
Suppose $\mathbf{v} \in M \otimes \mathcal{R}$ nonzero satisfies $F \mathbf{v}=\pi^{m} \mathbf{v}$. We can then formally write $\mathbf{v}=\sum_{i \in \mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{v}_{i} t^{i}$ with $\mathbf{v}_{i} \in M$, and then we have $F \mathbf{v}_{i}=\pi^{m} \mathbf{v}_{q i}$ for each $i$. If $\mathbf{v}_{i} \neq 0$ for some $i<0$, we then have $\mathbf{v}_{q^{l} i}=\pi^{-l m} F^{l} \mathbf{v}_{i}$, but this violates the convergence condition defining $\mathcal{R}$. Hence $\mathbf{v}_{i}=0$ for $i<0$.
Let $\mathcal{R}^{+}$be the subring of $\mathcal{R}$ consisting of series $\sum_{i} c_{i} t^{i}$ with $c_{i}=0$ for $i<0$. Now if $M \otimes \mathcal{R}$ admits a basis of eigenvectors, then we have just shown that each basis element belongs to $M \otimes \mathcal{R}^{+}$, and likewise for the dual basis of $M^{\vee} \otimes \mathcal{R}^{+}$. We can then reduce modulo the ideal of $\mathcal{R}^{+}$consisting of series with constant coefficient zero, to produce a basis of eigenvectors of $M$.

REmark 4.5.6. Beware that in the proof of Lemma 4.5.5, there do exist nonzero eigenvectors in $M \otimes \mathcal{R}^{+}$with constant coefficient zero; however, these eigenvectors cannot be part of a basis.

Theorem 4.5.7. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\mathcal{R}$.
(a) There exists a Dieudonné-Manin decomposition of $M$.
(b) For any Dieudonné-Manin decomposition $M=\oplus_{j=1}^{m} M_{c_{j}, d_{j}}$ of $M$, let $s_{1}<\cdots<s_{l}$ be the distinct elements of the slope multiset of the decomposition. For $i=1, \ldots, l$, let $M_{i}$ be the direct sum of $M_{c_{j}, d_{j}}$ over all $j$ for which $c_{j} / d_{j} \leq s_{i}$. Then the filtration $0 \subset M_{1} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}=M$ coincides with the $H N$-filtration of $M$.
(c) The slope multiset of any Dieudonné-Manin decomposition of $M$ consists of the $H N$-slopes of $M$. In particular, the slope multiset does not depend on the choice of the decomposition.

Proof. (a) For $v_{K}$ nontrivial, this is Proposition 4.5.3, so we need only treat the case of $v_{K}$ trivial. Another way to say this is every $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is isomorphic to a direct sum of standard $\sigma$-submodules.

Set notation as in Lemma 4.5.5. By Proposition 4.5.3, $M \otimes \mathcal{R}$ is isomorphic to a direct sum of standard $\sigma$-modules. That direct sum has the form $N \otimes \mathcal{R}$, where $N$ is the corresponding direct sum of standard $\sigma$-modules over $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. The isomorphism $M \otimes \mathcal{R} \rightarrow N \otimes \mathcal{R}$ corresponds
to an element of $H^{0}\left(\left(M^{\vee} \otimes N\right) \otimes \mathcal{R}\right)$, which extends to a basis of eigenvectors of $[n]_{*}\left(M^{\vee} \otimes N\right) \otimes \mathcal{R}$ for some $n$. By Lemma 4.5.5, this basis consists of elements of $[n]_{*}\left(M^{\vee} \otimes N\right)$; hence $M \cong N$, as desired.
(b) By Lemma 3.4.9, any standard $\sigma$-module is stable; hence a direct sum of standard $\sigma$-modules of a single slope is semistable. Thus the described filtration is indeed an HN-filtration.
(c) This follows from (b).

Remark 4.5.8. The case of $v_{K}$ trivial in Theorem 4.5.7(a) is precisely the standard Dieudonné-Manin classification of $\sigma$-modules over a complete discretely valued field with algebraically closed residue field. It is more commonly derived on its own, as in [14], [29], [18], or [19, Theorem 5.6].

Corollary 4.5.9. For any coprime integers $c, d$ with $d>0, \operatorname{End}\left(M_{c, d}\right)$ is a division algebra.

Proof. Suppose $\phi \in \operatorname{End}\left(M_{c, d}\right)$ is nonzero. Decompose $\operatorname{im}(\phi)$ according to Theorem 4.5.7; then each standard summand of $\operatorname{im}(\phi)$ must have slope $\leq c / d$ by Corollary 4.1.4. On the other hand, each summand is a $\sigma$-submodule of $M_{c, d}$, so must have slope $\geq c / d$ again by Corollary 4.1.4. Thus each standard summand of $\operatorname{im}(\phi)$ must have slope exactly $c / d$. In particular, there can be only one such summand, it must have rank $d$, and by Lemma 3.4.2, $\operatorname{im}(\phi)=M_{c, d}$. Hence $\phi$ is surjective; since $\phi$ is a linear map between free modules of the same finite rank, it is also injective. We conclude that $\operatorname{End}\left(M_{c, d}\right)$ is indeed a division algebra, as desired.

Proposition 4.5.10. A $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\mathcal{R}$ is semistable (resp. stable) if and only if $M \cong M_{c, d}^{\oplus n}$ for some $c, d, n$ (resp. $M \cong M_{c, d}$ for some $c, d$ ).

Proof. This is an immediate corollary of Theorem 4.5.7. (Compare [17, Corollary 11.6].)

Remark 4.5.11. By Theorem 4.5.7, every $\sigma$-module over $\mathcal{R}$ decomposes as a direct sum of semistable $\sigma$-modules, i.e., the Harder-Narasimhan filtration splits. However, when $v_{K}$ is nontrivial, this decomposition/splitting is not canonical, so it does not make sense to try to prove any descent results for such decompositions. (When $v_{K}$ is trivial, the splitting is unique by virtue of Corollary 4.1.4.) Of course, the number and type of summands in a DieudonnéManin decomposition are unique, since they are determined by the HN-polygon; indeed, they constitute complete invariants for isomorphism of $\sigma$-modules over $\mathcal{R}$ (compare [17, Corollary 11.8]).

Proposition 4.5.12. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\mathcal{R}$, let $M_{1}$ be the first step in the Harder-Narasimhan filtration, and put $d=\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{1}\right)$. Then $\wedge^{d} M_{1}$ is the first step in the Harder-Narasimhan filtration of $\wedge^{d} M$.

Proof. Decompose $M$ according to Theorem 4.5.7, so that $M_{1}$ is the direct sum of the summands of minimum slope $s_{1}$. Take the $d$-th exterior power of this decomposition (i.e., apply the Künneth formula); by Lemma 4.1.2, the minimum slope among the new summands is $d s_{1}$, achieved only by $\wedge^{d} M_{1}$.

Remark 4.5.13. More generally, the first step in the Harder-Narasimhan filtration of $\wedge^{i} M$ is $\wedge^{i} M_{j}$, for the smallest $j$ such that $\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{j}\right) \geq i$; the argument is similar.

Proposition 4.5.14. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\mathcal{R}$, and let $M \cong \oplus_{i=1}^{l} M_{c_{i}, d_{i}}$ be a Dieudonné-Manin decomposition of $M$.
(a) If $v_{K}$ is nontrivial, then there exists a nonzero homomorphism $f: M_{c, d} \rightarrow$ $M$ of $\sigma$-modules if and only if $c / d \geq \min _{i}\left\{c_{i} / d_{i}\right\}$, and there exists a nonzero homomorphism $f: M \rightarrow M_{c, d}$ of $\sigma$-modules if and only if $c / d \leq$ $\max _{i}\left\{c_{i} / d_{i}\right\}$.
(b) If $v_{K}$ is trivial, then there exists a nonzero homomorphism $f: M_{c, d} \rightarrow M$ or $f: M \rightarrow M_{c, d}$ of $\sigma$-modules if and only if $c / d \in\left\{c_{1} / d_{1}, \ldots, c_{l} / d_{l}\right\}$.

Proof. Apply Corollary 4.1.4.

### 4.6 The calculus of slopes

Theorem 4.5.7 affords a number of consequences for the calculus of slopes.
Definition 4.6.1. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$. Define the absolute $H N$ slopes and absolute HN-polygon of $M$ to be the HN-slopes and HN-polygon of $M \otimes \mathcal{R}$, and denote the latter by $P(M)$. We say $M$ is pure (or isoclinic) of slope $s$ if the absolute HN-slopes of $M$ are all equal to $s$. By Proposition 4.5.10, $M$ is isoclinic if and only if $M \otimes \mathcal{R}$ is semistable. We use the adjective unit-root to mean "isoclinic of slope 0 ".

Remark 4.6.2. We will show later (Theorem 6.4.1) that the HN-filtration of $M \otimes \mathcal{R}$ coincides with the base extension of the HN-filtration of $M$, which will mean that the absolute HN -slopes of $M$ coincide with the HN -slopes of $M$.

Proposition 4.6.3. Let $M$ and $M^{\prime}$ be $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$. Let $c_{1}, \ldots, c_{m}$ and $c_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, c_{n}^{\prime}$ be the absolute $H N$-slopes of $M$ and $M^{\prime}$, respectively.
(a) The absolute $H N$-slopes of $M \oplus M^{\prime}$ are $c_{1}, \ldots, c_{m}, c_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, c_{n}^{\prime}$.
(b) The absolute $H N$-slopes of $M \otimes M^{\prime}$ are $c_{i} c_{j}^{\prime}$ for $i=1, \ldots, m, j=1, \ldots, n$.
(c) The absolute $H N$-slopes of $\wedge^{d} M$ are $c_{i_{1}}+\cdots+c_{i_{d}}$ for all $1 \leq i_{1}<\cdots<$ $i_{d} \leq m$.
(d) The absolute HN-slopes of $[a]_{*} M$ are $a c_{1}, \ldots, a c_{m}$.
(e) The absolute $H N$-slopes of $M(b)$ are $c_{1}+b, \ldots, c_{m}+b$.

Proof. There is no harm in tensoring up to $\mathcal{R}$, or in applying $[a]_{*}$ for some positive integer $a$. In particular, using Theorem 4.5.7, we may reduce to the case where $M$ and $M^{\prime}$ admit bases of eigenvectors, whose slopes must be the $c_{i}$ and the $c_{j}^{\prime}$. Then we obtain bases of eigenvectors of $M \oplus M^{\prime}, M \otimes M^{\prime}, \wedge^{d} M$, $[a]_{*} M, M(b)$, and thus may read off the claims.

Proposition 4.6.4. Let $M_{1}, M_{2}$ be $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ such that each absolute HN-slope of $M_{1}$ is less than each absolute $H N$-slope of $M_{2}$. Then $\operatorname{Hom}\left(M_{1}, M_{2}\right)=0$.

Proof. Tensor up to $\mathcal{R}$, then apply Theorem 4.5.7 and Proposition 4.5.14.

### 4.7 Splitting exact sequences

As we have seen already (e.g., in Proposition 4.3.4), a short exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ may or may not split. Whether or not it splits depends very much on the Newton polygons involved. For starters, we have the following.

Definition 4.7.1. Given Newton polygons $P_{1}, \ldots, P_{m}$, define the sum $P_{1}+$ $\cdots+P_{m}$ of these polygons to be the Newton polygon whose slope multiset is the union of the slope multisets of $P_{1}, \ldots, P_{m}$. Also, write $P_{1} \geq P_{2}$ to mean that $P_{1}$ lies above $P_{2}$.

Proposition 4.7.2. Let $0 \rightarrow M_{1} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{2} \rightarrow 0$ be an exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$.
(a) We have $P(M) \geq P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(M_{2}\right)$.
(b) We have $P(M)=P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(M_{2}\right)$ if and only if the exact sequence splits over $\mathcal{R}$.

Proof. For (a), note that from the HN-filtrations of $M_{1} \otimes \mathcal{R}$ and $M_{2} \otimes \mathcal{R}$, we obtain a semistable filtration of $M \otimes \mathcal{R}$ whose Newton polygon is $P\left(M_{1}\right)+$ $P\left(M_{2}\right)$. The claim now follows from Proposition 3.5.4.
For (b), note that if the sequence splits, then $P(M)=P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(M_{2}\right)$ by Proposition 4.6.3. Conversely, suppose that $P(M)=P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(M_{2}\right)$; we prove by induction on rank that if $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}=\mathcal{R}$, then the exact sequence splits. Our base case is where $M_{1}$ and $M_{2}$ are standard. If $\mu\left(M_{1}\right) \leq \mu\left(M_{2}\right)$, then the exact sequence splits by Corollary 4.1.4, so assume that $\mu\left(M_{1}\right)>\mu\left(M_{2}\right)$. By Theorem 4.5.7, we have an isomorphism $M \cong M_{1} \oplus M_{2}$, which gives a map $M_{2} \rightarrow M$. By Corollary 4.5.9, the composition $M_{2} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{2}$ is either zero or an isomorphism; in the former case, by exactness the image of $M_{2} \rightarrow M$ must land in $M_{1} \subseteq M$. But that violates Corollary 4.1.4, so the composition $M_{2} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{2}$ is an isomorphism, and the exact sequence splits.

We next treat the case of $M_{1}$ nonstandard. Apply Theorem 4.5.7 to obtain a decomposition $M_{1} \cong N \oplus N^{\prime}$ with $N$ standard. We have

$$
\begin{aligned}
P(M) & \geq P(N)+P(M / N) \quad[\text { by }(\mathrm{a})] \\
& \geq P(N)+P\left(M_{1} / N\right)+P\left(M_{2}\right) \quad[\text { by }(\mathrm{a})] \\
& =P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(M_{2}\right) \quad\left[\text { because } N \text { is a summand of } M_{1}\right] \\
& =P(M) \quad[\text { by hypothesis }] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence all of the inequalities must be equalities; in particular, $P(M / N)=$ $P\left(M_{1} / N\right)+P\left(M_{2}\right)$. By the induction hypothesis, the exact sequence $0 \rightarrow$ $M_{1} / N \rightarrow M / N \rightarrow M_{2} \rightarrow 0$ splits; consequently, the exact sequence $0 \rightarrow N^{\prime} \rightarrow$ $M \rightarrow M / N^{\prime} \rightarrow 0$ splits. But we have an exact sequence $0 \rightarrow N \rightarrow M / N^{\prime} \rightarrow$ $M_{2} \rightarrow 0$ and as above, we have $P\left(M / N^{\prime}\right)=P(N)+P\left(M_{2}\right)$, so this sequence also splits by the induction hypothesis. This yields the claim.
To conclude, note that the case of $M_{2}$ nonstandard follows from the case of $M_{1}$ nonstandard by taking duals. Hence we have covered all cases.

Corollary 4.7.3. Let $0 \rightarrow M_{1} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{2} \rightarrow 0$ be an exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules over $\mathcal{R}$, such that every slope of $M_{1}$ is less than or equal to every slope of $M_{2}$. Then the exact sequence splits; in particular, the HN-multiset of $M$ is the union of the $H N$-multiset of $M_{1}$ and $M_{2}$.
Proof. With the assumption on the slopes, the filtration induced by the HNfiltrations of $M_{1}$ and $M_{2}$ becomes an HN-filtration after possibly removing one redundant step in the middle (in case the highest slope of $M_{1}$ coincides with the lowest slope of $M_{2}$ ). Thus its Newton polygon coincides with the HN-polygon, so Proposition 4.7.2 yields the claim.

Corollary 4.7.4. Let $0=M_{0} \subset M_{1} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}=M$ be a filtration of a $\sigma$ module $M$ over $\mathcal{R}$ by saturated $\sigma$-submodules with isoclinic quotients. Suppose that the Newton polygon of the filtration coincides with the HN-polygon of $M$. Then the filtration splits.
REMARK 4.7.5. In certain contexts, one can obtain stronger splitting theorems; for instance, the key step in [20] is a splitting theorem for $\sigma$-modules with connection over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$ (in the notation of Section 2.3).

## 5 Generic and special slope filtrations

Given a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, we have two paradigms for constructing slopes and HN-polygons: the "generic" paradigm, in which we pass to $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ as if $v_{K}$ were trivial, and the "special" paradigm, in which we pass to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$. (See Section 7.3 for an explanation of the use of these adjectives.) In this chapter, we compare these paradigms: our main results are that the special HN-polygon lies above the generic one (Proposition 5.5.1), and that when the two polygons coincide, one obtains a common HN-filtration over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ (Theorem 5.5.2). This last result is a key tool for constructing slope filtrations in general.

Convention 5.0.1. We continue to retain notations as in Chapter 2. We again point out that when working over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, the adjective "generic" will imply passage to $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, while the adjective "special" will imply passage to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$. We also abbreviate such expressions as "generic absolute HN-slopes" to "generic HN-slopes". (Keep in mind that the modifier "absolute" will ultimately be rendered superfluous anyway by Theorem 6.4.1.)

### 5.1 Interlude: Lattices

Besides descending subobjects, we will also have need to descend entire $\sigma$ modules; this matter is naturally discussed in terms of lattices.

Definition 5.1.1. Let $R \hookrightarrow S$ be an injection of domains, and let $M$ be a finite locally free $S$-module. An $R$-lattice in $M$ is an $R$-submodule $N$ of $M$ such that the induced map $N \otimes_{R} S \rightarrow M$ is a bijection. If $M$ is a $\sigma$-module, an $R$-lattice in the category of $\sigma$-modules is a module-theoretic $R$-lattice which is stable under $F$.

The existence of a $\Gamma$-lattice for a $\sigma$-module defined over $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is closely tied to nonnegativity of the slopes.

Proposition 5.1.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with nonnegative generic slopes. Then $M$ contains an $F$-stable $\Gamma_{\text {con-lattice }} N$. Moreover, if the generic slopes of $M$ are all zero, then $N$ can be chosen so that $F: \sigma^{*} M \rightarrow M$ is an isomorphism.

Proof. Put $M^{\prime}=M \otimes \Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; then by Theorem 4.5.7, we can write $M^{\prime}$ as a direct sum of standard submodules, whose slopes by hypothesis are nonnegative. From this presentation, we immediately obtain a $\Gamma^{\text {alg-lattice of } M^{\prime}}$ (generated by standard basis vectors of the standard submodules); its intersection with $M$ gives the desired lattice.

Proposition 5.1.2 also has the following converse.
Proposition 5.1.3. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma$. Then the generic $H N$ slopes of $M$ are all nonnegative; moreover, they are all zero if and only if $F: \sigma^{*} M \rightarrow M$ is an isomorphism.

Proof. Let $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ be a basis of $M$, and define the $n \times n$ matrix $A$ over $\Gamma$ by $F \mathbf{e}_{j}=\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{e}_{i}$. Suppose $\mathbf{v}$ is an eigenvector of $M$, and write $\mathbf{v}=\sum_{i} c_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ and $F \mathbf{v}=\sum_{i} d_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i}$; then $\min _{i}\left\{w\left(d_{i}\right)\right\}-\min _{i}\left\{w\left(c_{i}\right)\right\}$ is the slope of $\mathbf{v}$. But $w\left(A_{i j}\right) \geq 0$ for all $i, j$, so $\min _{i}\left\{w\left(d_{i}\right)\right\} \geq \min _{i}\left\{w\left(c_{i}\right)\right\}$. This yields the first claim.
For the second claim, note on one hand that if $F: \sigma^{*} M \rightarrow M$ is an isomorphism, then $M^{\vee}$ is also a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma$, and so the generic HN-slopes of both $M$ and $M^{\vee}$ are nonnegative. Since these slopes are negatives of each other by Proposition 4.6.3, they must all be zero. On the other hand, if the generic HNslopes of $M$ are all zero, then by Theorem 4.5.7, $M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ admits a basis
$\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of eigenvectors of slope 0 . Put $M^{\prime}=M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }} ;$ for $i=0, \ldots, n$, let $M_{i}^{\prime}$ be the intersection of $M^{\prime}$ with the $\Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$-span of $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{i}$. Then each $M_{i}^{\prime}$ is $F$-stable; moreover, $M_{i}^{\prime} / M_{i-1}^{\prime}$ is spanned by the image of $\pi^{c_{i}} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ for some $c_{i}$, and so $F: \sigma^{*}\left(M_{i}^{\prime} / M_{i-1}^{\prime}\right) \rightarrow\left(M_{i}^{\prime} / M_{i-1}^{\prime}\right)$ is an isomorphism for each $i$. It follows that $F: \sigma^{*} M^{\prime} \rightarrow M^{\prime}$ is an isomorphism, as then is $F: \sigma^{*} M \rightarrow M$.

Remark 5.1.4. The results in this section can also be proved using cyclic vectors, as in [19, Proposition 5.8]; compare Lemma 5.2.4 below.

### 5.2 The generic HN-filtration

Since the distinction between $v_{K}$ trivial and nontrivial was not pronounced in the previous chapter, it is worth taking time out to clarify some phenomena specific to the "generic" ( $v_{K}$ trivial) setting.
Proposition 5.2.1. For any $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, there is a unique decomposition $M=P_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus P_{l}$, where each $P_{i}$ is isoclinic, and the generic slopes $\mu\left(P_{1}\right), \ldots, \mu\left(P_{l}\right)$ are all distinct.

Proof. The existence of such a decomposition follows from Theorem 4.5.7; the uniqueness follows from repeated application of Corollary 4.1.4.

Definition 5.2.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Define the slope decomposition of $M$ to be the decomposition $M=P_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus P_{l}$ given by Proposition 5.2.1.

For the rest of this section, we catalog some routine methods for identifying the generic slopes of a $\sigma$-module.

Definition 5.2.3. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ of rank $n$. A cyclic vector of $M$ is an element $\mathbf{v} \in M$ such that $\mathbf{v}, F \mathbf{v}, \cdots, F^{n-1} \mathbf{v}$ form a basis of $M$.

Lemma 5.2.4. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ of rank $n$. Let $\mathbf{v}$ be a cyclic vector of $M$, and define $a_{0}, \ldots, a_{n-1} \in \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ by the equation

$$
F^{n} \mathbf{v}+a_{n-1} F^{n-1} \mathbf{v}+\cdots+a_{0} \mathbf{v}=0
$$

Then the generic $H N$-polygon of $M$ coincides with the Newton polygon of the polynomial $x^{n}+a_{n-1} x^{n-1}+\cdots+a_{0}$.

Proof. There is no harm in assuming that $K$ is algebraically closed, that $\pi$ is fixed by $\sigma$, or that $\mathcal{O}$ is large enough that the slopes of $M$ are all integers. Then $M$ admits a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ with $F \mathbf{e}_{i}=\pi^{c_{i}} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ for some integers $c_{i}$. Put $\mathbf{v}_{0}=\mathbf{v}$. Given $\mathbf{v}_{l}$, write $\mathbf{v}_{l}=x_{l, 1} \mathbf{e}_{1}+\cdots+x_{l, n} \mathbf{e}_{n}$, put $b_{l}=\pi^{c_{l}} x_{l, l}^{\sigma} / x_{l, l}$, and put $\mathbf{v}_{l+1}=F \mathbf{v}_{l}-b_{l} \mathbf{v}_{l}$. Then $\mathbf{v}_{l}$ lies in the span of $\mathbf{e}_{l+1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$; in particular, $\mathbf{v}_{n}=0$.
We then have

$$
\left(F-b_{n-1}\right) \cdots\left(F-b_{1}\right)\left(F-b_{0}\right) \mathbf{v}=0
$$

since $\mathbf{v}$ is a cyclic vector, there is a unique way to write $F^{n} \mathbf{v}$ as a linear combination of $\mathbf{v}, F \mathbf{v}, \cdots, F^{n-1} \mathbf{v}$. Hence we have an equality of operators

$$
\left(F-b_{n-1}\right) \cdots\left(F-b_{1}\right)\left(F-b_{0}\right)=F^{n}+a_{n-1} F^{n-1}+\cdots+a_{0},
$$

from which the equality of polygons may be read off directly.
Remark 5.2.5. One can turn Lemma 5.2.4 around and use it to prove the existence of Dieudonné-Manin decompositions in the case of $v_{K}$ trivial; for instance, this is the approach in [19, Theorem 5.6]. One of the essential difficulties in [19] is that there is no analogous way to "read off" the HN-polygon of a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$; this forces the approach to constructing the slope filtration over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ to be somewhat indirect.

Lemma 5.2.4 is sometimes inconvenient to apply, because the calculus of cyclic vectors is quite "nonlinear". The following criterion will prove to be more useful for our purposes.

Lemma 5.2.6. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Suppose that there exists a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of $M$ with the property that the matrix $A$ given by $F \mathbf{e}_{j}=$ $\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ satisfies $w\left(A D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$ for some $n \times n$ diagonal matrix $D$ over $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Then the generic slopes of $M$ are equal to the valuations of the diagonal entries of $D$. Moreover, there exists an invertible matrix $U$ over $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}$ with $w\left(U-I_{n}\right)>0, w\left(D U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$, and $U^{-1} A U^{\sigma}=D$.

Proof. One can directly solve for $U$; see [19, Proposition 5.9] for this calculation. Note that it does not matter whether the $D^{-1}$ appears to the left or to the right of $A$, as a change of basis will flip it over to the other side; the entries of $D$ will get hit by $\sigma$ or its inverse, but their valuations will not change. Alternatively, the existence of $U$ also follows from Proposition 5.4.5 below.

Remark 5.2.7. Lemmas 5.2 .4 and 5.2 .6 suggest that one can read off the generic HN-polygon of a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ by computing the slopes of eigenvectors of a matrix via which $F$ acts on some basis. This does not work in general, as observed by Katz [18].

### 5.3 Descending the generic HN-filtration

In the generic setting ( $v_{K}$ trivial), we have the following descent property for Harder-Narasimhan filtrations.

Proposition 5.3.1. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Then the HarderNarasimhan filtration of $M$, tensored up to $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, gives the HarderNarasimhan filtration of $M \otimes \Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

Proof. One can prove this by Galois descent, as in [19, Proposition 5.10]; here is an alternate argument. It suffices to check that the first step $M_{1}^{\prime}$ of the Harder-Narasimhan filtration of $M^{\prime}=M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ descends to $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; by

Lemma 3.6.2 and Proposition 4.5.12, we may by taking exterior powers reduce to the case where $M_{1}^{\prime}$ has rank 1 . In particular, the least slope $s_{1}$ must be an integer. By twisting, we may assume that $s_{1}=0$.
By Proposition 5.1.2, we can find a $\sigma$-stable $\Gamma$-lattice $N$ of $M$; put $N^{\prime}=$ $N \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}$. Then $N^{\prime} \cap M_{1}^{\prime}$ may be characterized as the set of limit points, for the $\pi$-adic topology, of sequences of the form $\left\{F^{l} \mathbf{v}_{l}\right\}_{l=0}^{\infty}$ with $\mathbf{v}_{l} \in N^{\prime}$ for each l. (This may be verified on a basis of $d$-eigenvectors for appropriate $d$ thanks to Theorem 4.5.7, where it is evident.)
The characterization of $N^{\prime} \cap M_{1}^{\prime}$ we just gave is linear, so it cuts out a rank one submodule of $N$ already over $\Gamma$. This yields the desired result.

### 5.4 De Jong's Reverse filtration

We now consider the case of $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, in which case we have a "generic" HN-filtration defined over $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, and a "special" HN-filtration defined over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}^{\text {alg }}$. These two filtrations are not directly comparable, because they live over incompatible overrings of $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. To compare them, we must use a "reverse filtration" that meets both halfway; the construction is due to de Jong [13, Proposition 5.8], but our presentation follows [19, Proposition 5.11] (wherein it is called the "descending generic filtration").
We first need a lemma that descends some eigenvectors from $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}$ to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$; besides de Jong's [13, Proposition 5.8], this generalizes a lemma of Tsuzuki [34, 4.1.1].
Lemma 5.4.1. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ all of whose generic slopes are nonpositive. Let $\mathbf{v} \in M \otimes \Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ be an eigenvector of slope 0 . Then $\mathbf{v} \in M$.

Proof. By Proposition 5.1.2, we can find an $F$-stable $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$-lattice $N^{\vee}$ of $M^{\vee}$; the dual lattice $N$ is an $F^{-1}$-stable $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\mathrm{alg}}$-lattice of $M$. Let $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ be a basis of $N$, define the $n \times n$ matrix $A$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ by the equation $F^{-1} \mathbf{e}_{j}=\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{e}_{i}$, and choose $r>0$ such that $A$ is invertible over $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {alg }}$.
Let $\mathbf{v} \in M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ be an eigenvector of slope 0 ; in showing that $\mathbf{v} \in M$, there is no harm in assuming (by multiplying by a power of $\pi$ as needed) that $\mathbf{v} \in N \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}$. Write $\mathbf{v}=\sum x_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ with $x_{i} \in \Gamma^{\text {alg }}$. Then for each $l \geq 0$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\min _{i} \min _{m \leq l}\left\{v_{m, r}\left(x_{i}\right)\right\} & \geq w_{r}(A)+\min _{i} \min _{m \leq l}\left\{v_{m, r}\left(x_{i}^{\sigma^{-1}}\right)\right\} \\
& \geq w_{r}(A)+q^{-1} \min _{i} \min _{m \leq l}\left\{v_{m, r}\left(x_{i}\right)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows that

$$
\min _{i} \min _{m \leq l}\left\{v_{m, r}\left(x_{i}\right)\right\} \geq q w_{r}(A) /(q-1)
$$

and so $x_{i} \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$. Hence $\mathbf{v} \in M$, as desired.
We now proceed to construct the reverse filtration.

Definition 5.4.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with slope decomposition $P_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus P_{l}$, labeled so that $\mu\left(P_{1}\right)>\cdots>\mu\left(P_{l}\right)$. Define the reverse filtration of $M$ as the semistable filtration $0=M_{0} \subset M_{1} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}=M$ with $M_{i}=P_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus P_{i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, l$. By construction, its Newton polygon coincides with the generic Newton polygon of $M$.

Proposition 5.4.3. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Then the reverse filtration of $M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ descends to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

Proof. Put $M^{\prime}=M \otimes \Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, and let $0=M_{0}^{\prime} \subset M_{1}^{\prime} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}^{\prime}=M^{\prime}$ be the reverse filtration of $M^{\prime}$. It suffices to show that $M_{1}^{\prime}$ descends to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; by Lemma 3.6.2, we may reduce to the case where rank $M_{1}^{\prime}=1$ by passing from $M$ to an exterior power. By twisting, we may then reduce to the case $\mu\left(M_{1}^{\prime}\right)=0$. By Proposition 3.3.2, $M_{1}^{\prime}$ is then generated by an eigenvector of slope 0; by Lemma 5.4.1, that eigenvector belongs to $M$. Hence $M_{1}^{\prime}$ descends to $M$, proving the claim. (Compare [19, Proposition 5.11].)

REmARK 5.4.4. The reverse filtration actually descends all the way to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ whenever $K$ is perfect, but we will not need this.

It may also be useful for some applications to have a quantitative version of Proposition 5.4.3.
Proposition 5.4.5. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Suppose that for some $r>0$, there exists a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of $M$ with the property that the $n \times n$ matrix $A$ given by $F \mathbf{e}_{j}=\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ has entries in $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Suppose further that $w\left(A D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$ and $w_{r}\left(A D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$ for some $n \times n$ diagonal matrix $D$ over $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, with $w\left(D_{11}\right) \geq \cdots \geq w\left(D_{n n}\right)$. Then there exists an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $U$ over $\Gamma_{q r}^{\text {alg }}$ with $w\left(U-I_{n}\right)>0$, $w_{r}\left(U-I_{n}\right)>0$, $w\left(D U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0, w_{r}\left(D U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$, such that $U^{-1} A U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}$ is upper triangular nilpotent.

Proof. Put $c_{0}=\min \left\{w\left(A D^{-1}-I_{n}\right), w_{r}\left(A D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)\right\}$ and $U_{0}=I_{n}$. Given $U_{l}$, put $A_{l}=U_{l}^{-1} A U_{l}^{\sigma}$, and write $A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}=B_{l}+C_{l}$ with $B_{l}$ upper triangular nilpotent and $C_{l}$ lower triangular. Suppose that $\min \left\{w\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-\right.\right.$ $\left.I_{n}\right)$, $\left.w_{r}\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)\right\} \geq c_{0}$; put $c_{l}=\min \left\{w\left(C_{l}\right), w_{r}\left(C_{l}\right)\right\}$. Choose a matrix $X_{l}$ over $\Gamma_{q r}$ with

$$
\begin{gathered}
C_{l}+X_{l}=D X_{l}^{\sigma} D^{-1} \\
\min \left\{w\left(X_{l}\right), w\left(D X_{l}^{\sigma} D^{-1}\right)\right\} \geq w\left(C_{l}\right), \\
\min \left\{w_{r}\left(X_{l}\right), w_{r}\left(D X_{l}^{\sigma} D^{-1}\right)\right\} \geq c_{l}
\end{gathered}
$$

(This amounts to solving a system of equations of the form $c+x=\lambda^{-1} x^{\sigma}$ for $\lambda \in \mathcal{O}$; the analysis is as in Proposition 3.3.7.)
Put $U_{l+1}=U_{l}\left(I_{n}+X_{l}\right)$. We then have

$$
\begin{aligned}
A_{l+1} D^{-1}= & \left(I_{n}-X_{l}+X_{l}^{2}-\cdots\right)\left(I_{n}+B_{l}+C_{l}\right)\left(I_{n}+D X_{l}^{\sigma} D^{-1}\right) \\
& \text { Documenta Mathematica } 10(2005) 447-525
\end{aligned}
$$

whence $w\left(C_{l+1}\right) \geq w\left(C_{l}\right)+c_{0}$ and $w_{r}\left(C_{l+1}\right) \geq c_{l}+c_{0}$. Consequently $c_{l} \geq$ $(l+1) c_{0}$, so the $U_{l}$ converge under $w_{q r}$ to a limit $U$ such that $U^{-1} A U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}$ is upper triangular nilpotent, as desired.

Remark 5.4.6. For more on de Jong's original application of the reverse filtration, see Section 7.5.

### 5.5 Comparison of polygons

Using the reverse filtration, we obtain the fundamental comparison between the generic and special Newton polygons of a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

Proposition 5.5.1. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Then the special $H N$-polygon of $M$ (i.e., the $H N$-polygon of $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$ ) lies above the generic $H N$-polygon (i.e., the $H N$-polygon of $M \otimes \Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ ).

Proof. Tensor up to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, then apply Proposition 3.5.4 to the reverse filtration (Proposition 5.4.3).

The case where the polygons coincide is especially pleasant, and will be crucial to our later results.

Theorem 5.5.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ whose generic and special $H N$-polygons coincide. Then the generic and special HN-filtrations of $M \otimes$ $\Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ and $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$, respectively, are both obtained by base change from an exhaustive filtration of $M$.

Proof. It suffices to check that the first steps of the generic and special HNfiltrations descend and coincide; by Lemma 3.6.2, we may reduce to the case where the least slope of the common polygon occurs with multiplicity 1. Choose a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of $M$, let $\mathbf{v} \in M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ be a generator of the first step of the HN-filtration of $M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, and write $\mathbf{v}=a_{1} \mathbf{v}_{1}+\cdots+a_{n} \mathbf{v}_{n}$. By Proposition 5.3.1, $a_{i} / a_{j} \in \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ for any $i, j$ with $a_{j} \neq 0$.
By Corollary 4.7.4, the reverse filtration splits over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$; by Proposition 3.3.7 (b1), it also splits over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Hence $a_{i} / a_{j} \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ for any $i, j$ with $a_{j} \neq 0$. Since $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \cap \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]=\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, we have $a_{i} / a_{j} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ for any $i, j$ with $a_{j} \neq 0$. Hence the first step of the generic HN-filtration descends to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; let $M_{1}$ be the corresponding $\sigma$-submodule of $M \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Let $M_{1}^{\prime}$ be the first step of the HN-filtration of $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$; then as in the proof of Proposition 4.2.5, $M_{1}^{\prime}$ is the maximal $\sigma$-submodule of $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{\mathrm{alg}}$ of slope $\mu\left(M_{1}^{\prime}\right)=\mu\left(M_{1}\right)$. In particular, $M_{1} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{\mathrm{alg}} \subseteq M_{1}^{\prime}$, and by Lemma 3.4.2, $M_{1} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$ and $M_{1}^{\prime}$ actually coincide. Hence the first step of the special HNfiltration is also a base extension of $M_{1}$. This yields the claim. (Compare [19, Proposition 5.16].)

Remark 5.5.3. The conditions of Theorem 5.5.2 may look restrictive, and indeed they are: many "natural" examples of $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ do
not have the same special and generic HN-polygons (e.g., the example of Section 7.3). However, Theorem 5.5.2 represents a critical step in the descent process for slope filtrations, as it allows us to move information from the generic paradigm into the special paradigm: specifically, the descent from algebraically closed $K$ down to general $K$ is much easier in the generic setting. Of course, in order to use this link, we must be able to force ourselves into the setting of Theorem 5.5.2; this is done in the next chapter.
Note that Theorem 5.5.2 implies that the generic and special HN-polygons of $M$ coincide if and only if the generic HN-filtration descends to $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. In some applications, it may be more useful to have a quantitative refinement of that statement; we can give one (in imitation of the proof of Proposition 4.3.4) as follows.

Proposition 5.5.4. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Suppose that for some $r>0$, there exists a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of $M$ with the property that the $n \times n$ matrix $A$ given by $F \mathbf{e}_{j}=\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ has entries in $\Gamma_{r}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Suppose further that $w\left(A D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$ and $w_{r}\left(A D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$ for some $n \times n$ diagonal matrix $D$ over $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, with $w\left(D_{11}\right) \geq \cdots \geq w\left(D_{n n}\right)$. Let $U$ be an invertible $n \times n$ matrix over $\Gamma^{\text {alg }}$ such that $w\left(U-I_{n}\right)>0, w\left(D U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$, and $U^{-1} A U^{\sigma}=D$ (as in Lemma 5.2.6). Then the generic and special HN-polygons of $M$ coincide if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{r}\left(U-I_{n}\right)>0, \quad w_{r}\left(D U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0 . \tag{5.5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The conditions on $U$ imply that $M$ admits a basis of eigenvectors over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; the slopes of these eigenvectors then give both the generic and special HN-slopes. Conversely, if the generic and special HN-polygons of $M$ coincide, then $U$ is invertible over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ by Theorem 5.5.2. It thus remains to prove that if $U$ has entries in $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$, then in fact (5.5.5) holds.
We start with a series of reductions. By Proposition 5.4.5, we may reduce to the case where $A D^{-1}-I_{n}$ is upper triangular nilpotent. Considering all matrices now as block matrices by grouping rows and columns where the diagonal entries of $D$ have the same valuation, we see that the matrix $U$ must now be block upper triangular, with diagonal blocks invertible over $\mathcal{O}$. Neither this property nor (5.5.5) is disturbed by multiplying $U$ by a block diagonal matrix over $\mathcal{O}$, so we may reduce to the case where $U$ is block upper triangular with identity matrices on the diagonal. Finally, note that at this point it suffices to check the case where $n=2, w\left(D_{11}\right)>w\left(D_{22}\right)$, and

$$
A D^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & a \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right), \quad U=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & u \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

as the general case follows by repeated application of this case.
Put $\lambda \in D_{11} D_{22}^{-1} \in \pi \mathcal{O}$. Then what we are to show is that given $a \in \Gamma_{r}^{\mathrm{alg}}$, $u \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{r}(a)>0, \quad w(u)>0, \quad \lambda a+u=\lambda u^{\sigma} \tag{5.5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

we must have $u \in \Gamma_{r}^{\text {alg }}$ and $w_{r}(u)>0$. Before verifying this, we make one further simplifying reduction, using the fact that there is no harm in replacing $a$ by $a-b+\lambda^{-1} b^{\sigma^{-1}}$ as long as $w_{r}(b)>0$ and $w_{r}\left(\lambda^{-1} b^{\sigma^{-1}}\right)>0$.
Note that for $b=\pi^{m}[\bar{x}]$ with $\bar{x} \in K^{\text {alg }}$, the condition that

$$
w_{r}(b) \leq w_{r}\left(\lambda^{-1} b^{\sigma^{-1}}\right)
$$

is equivalent to

$$
v_{K}(\bar{x}) \leq-\frac{q}{(q-1) r} w(\lambda)
$$

Moreover, this condition and the bound $w_{r}(b) \geq 0$ together imply that $w\left(\lambda^{-1} b^{\sigma^{-1}}\right)>0$.
Now write $a=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \pi^{i}\left[\overline{a_{i}}\right]$, and put $c=q w(\lambda) /(q-1) r$. For each $i$, let $j_{i}$ be the smallest nonnegative integer such that $q^{-j_{i}} v_{K}\left(\overline{a_{i}}\right)>-c$. We may then replace $a$ by

$$
a^{\prime}=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \lambda^{-1} \lambda^{-\sigma^{-1}} \cdots \lambda^{-\sigma^{j_{i}-1}}\left(\pi^{i}\left[\overline{a_{i}}\right]\right)^{\sigma^{-j_{i}}}
$$

without disturbing the truth of (5.5.6). In particular, we may reduce to the case where $v_{n}(a)>-c$ for all $n \geq 0$.
Under these conditions, put $m=w(\lambda)>0$, and note that if $v_{n}(u) \leq-c / q$ for some $u$, then $v_{n+m}\left(\lambda u^{\sigma}\right)=q v_{n}(u) \leq-c$, so the equation $\lambda a+u=\lambda u^{\sigma}$ implies $v_{n+m}(u)=q v_{n}(u)$. By induction on $l$, we have

$$
v_{n+l m}(u)=q^{l} v_{n}(u)
$$

for all nonnegative integers $l$, but this contradicts the hypothesis that $u \in \Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$. Consequently, we must have $v_{n}(u)>-c / q$ for all $n$.
Since $-c / q \geq-c(q-1) / q=-w(\lambda) / r$, the bound $v_{n}(u)>-c / q$ implies that $v_{n, r}(u)>0$ for $n \geq m$. Since $u \equiv 0(\bmod \lambda)$, we have $w_{r}(u)>0$, as desired.

## 6 Descents

We now show that the formation of the Harder-Narasimhan filtration commutes with base change, thus establishing the slope filtration theorem; the strategy is to show that a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {an, con }}$ admits a model over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$ whose special and generic Newton polygons coincide, then invoke Theorem 5.5.2. The material here is derived from [19, Chapter 6], but our presentation here is much more streamlined.

### 6.1 A matrix lemma

The following lemma is analogous to [19, Proposition 6.8], but in our new approach, we can prove much less and still eventually get the desired conclusion; this simplifies the matrix calculation considerably.

Lemma 6.1.1. For $r>0$, suppose that $\Gamma=\Gamma^{K}$ contains enough $r_{0}$-units for some $r_{0}>q r$. Let $D$ be an invertible $n \times n$ matrix over $\Gamma_{[r, r]}$, and put $h=$ $-w_{r}(D)-w_{r}\left(D^{-1}\right)$. Let $A$ be an $n \times n$ matrix over $\Gamma_{[r, r]}$ such that $w_{r}\left(A D^{-1}-\right.$ $\left.I_{n}\right)>h /(q-1)$. Then there exists an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $U$ over $\Gamma_{[r, q r]}$ such that $U^{-1} A U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}$ has entries in $\pi \Gamma_{r}$ and $w_{r}\left(U^{-1} A U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$.

Proof. Put $c_{0}=w_{r}\left(A D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)-h /(q-1)$. Define sequences of matrices $U_{0}, U_{1}, \ldots$ and $A_{0}, A_{1}, \ldots$ as follows. Start with $U_{0}=I_{n}$. Given an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $U_{l}$ over $\Gamma_{[r, q r]}$, put $A_{l}=U_{l}^{-1} A U_{l}^{\sigma}$. Suppose that $w_{r}\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right) \geq$ $c_{0}+h /(q-1)$; put

$$
c_{l}=\min _{m \leq 0}\left\{v_{m, r}\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)\right\}-h /(q-1),
$$

so that $c_{l} \geq c_{0}>0$.
Let $\sum u_{i j l m} \pi^{m}$ be a semiunit presentation of $\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)_{i j}$. Let $X_{l}$ be the $n \times n$ matrix with $\left(X_{l}\right)_{i j}=\sum_{m \leq 0} u_{i j l m} \pi^{m}$, and put $U_{l+1}=U_{l}\left(I_{n}+X_{l}\right)$. By Lemma 2.5.3, for $m \leq 0$ and $s \in[r, q r]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{s}\left(u_{i j l m} \pi^{m}\right) & \geq(s / r) w_{r}\left(u_{i j l m} \pi^{m}\right) \\
& \geq(s / r) \min _{k \leq m}\left\{v_{k, r}\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)\right\} \\
& \geq(s / r)\left(c_{l}+h /(q-1)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

hence $U_{l+1}$ is also invertible over $\Gamma_{[r, q r]}$. Moreover,

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{r}\left(D X_{l}^{\sigma} D^{-1}\right) & \geq w_{r}(D)+w_{r}\left(X_{l}^{\sigma}\right)+w_{r}\left(D^{-1}\right) \\
& =w_{q r}\left(X_{l}\right)-h \\
& \geq q\left(c_{l}+h /(q-1)\right)-h \\
& \geq q c_{l}+h /(q-1)
\end{aligned}
$$

Since

$$
A_{l+1} D^{-1}=\left(I_{n}+X_{l}\right)^{-1}\left(A_{l} D^{-1}\right)\left(I_{n}+D X_{l}^{\sigma} D^{-1}\right)
$$

we then have $w_{r}\left(A_{l+1} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right) \geq c_{0}+h /(q-1)$, so the iteration may continue. We now prove by induction that $c_{l} \geq(l+1) c_{0}$ for $l=0,1, \ldots$; this is clearly true for $l=0$. Given the claim for $l$, write

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(I_{n}+X_{l}\right)^{-1} A_{l} D^{-1}= \\
& \quad I_{n}+\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}-X_{l}\right)-X_{l}\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)+X_{l}^{2}\left(I_{n}+X_{l}\right)^{-1} A_{l} D^{-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{m}\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}-X_{l}\right) & =\infty \quad(m \leq 0) \\
w_{r}\left(X_{l}\left(A_{l} D^{-1}-I\right)\right) & \geq(l+2) c_{0}+2 h /(q-1) \\
w_{r}\left(X_{l}^{2}\left(I_{n}+X_{l}\right)^{-1} A_{l} D^{-1}\right) & \geq 2(l+1) c_{0}+2 h /(q-1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Putting this together, this means

$$
v_{m, r}\left(\left(I_{n}+X_{l}\right)^{-1} A_{l} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right) \geq(l+2) c_{0}+h /(q-1) \quad(m \leq 0)
$$

Since $w_{r}\left(D X_{l}^{\sigma} D^{-1}\right) \geq q c_{l}+h /(q-1) \geq(l+2) c_{0}+h /(q-1)$, we have $v_{m, r}\left(A_{l+1} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right) \geq(l+2) c_{0}+h /(q-1)$ for $m \leq 0$, i.e., $c_{l+1} \geq(l+2) c_{0}$. Since $w_{s}\left(X_{l}\right) \geq(s / r)\left(c_{l}+h /(q-1)\right)$ for $s \in[r, q r]$, and $c_{l} \rightarrow \infty$ as $l \rightarrow$ $\infty$, the sequence $\left\{U_{l}\right\}$ converges to a limit $U$, which is an invertible $n \times n$ matrix over $\Gamma_{[r, q r]}$ satisfying $w_{r}\left(U^{-1} A U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right) \geq c_{0}+h /(q-1)>0$. Moreover, by construction, we have $v_{m}\left(U^{-1} A U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)=\infty$ for $m \leq 0$; by Corollary 2.5.6, $U^{-1} A U^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}$ has entries in $\pi \Gamma_{r}$, as desired.

### 6.2 GOOD MODELS OF $\sigma$-MODULES

We now give a highly streamlined version of some arguments from [19, Chapter 6], that produce "good integral models" of $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$.

Lemma 6.2.1. In Lemma 6.1.1, suppose that $A$ and $D$ are both invertible over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}$. Then $U$ is invertible over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, q r}$.

Proof. Put $B=U^{-1} A U^{\sigma} D^{-1}$, so that $B$ is invertible over $\Gamma_{r}$. In the equation

$$
U^{-1} A U^{\sigma}=B D
$$

the matrices $A, U^{\sigma}, B, D$ are all invertible over $\Gamma_{[r / q, r]}$, so $U$ must be as well. Since the entries of $U$ and $U^{-1}$ already belong to $\Gamma_{[r, q r]}$, they in fact belong to $\Gamma_{[r / q, q r]}$ by Corollary 2.5.7. Repeating this argument, we see that $U$ is invertible over $\Gamma_{\left[r / q^{i}, q r\right]}$ for all positive integers $i$, yielding the desired result.

Proposition 6.2.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}$. Then there exists a finite separable extension $L$ of $K$ and a $\sigma$-module $N$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ such that $N \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L} \cong M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}$ and the generic and special $H N$-polygons of $N$ coincide.

Proof. Note that it is enough to do this with $L$ pseudo-finite separable, since applying $F$ allows to pass from $L$ to $L^{q}$. Also, there is no harm in assuming that the slopes of $M$ are integers, after applying $[a]_{*}$ as necessary.
Let $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ be a basis of $M$, and define the invertible $n \times n$ matrix $A$ over $\Gamma_{\text {an, con }}^{K}$ by $F \mathbf{e}_{j}=\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{e}_{i}$. By Theorem 4.5.7, there exists an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $U$ over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{\text {alg }}$ and a diagonal $n \times n$ matrix $D$ whose diagonal entries are powers of $\pi$, such that $U^{-1} A U^{\sigma}=D$. Put $h=\max _{i, j}\left\{w\left(D_{i i}\right)-w\left(D_{j j}\right)\right\}=$ $-w(D)-w\left(D^{-1}\right)$.
Choose $r>0$ such that $\Gamma$ has enough $r_{0}$-units for some $r_{0}>q r, A$ is defined and invertible over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, r}^{K}$, and $U$ is defined and invertible over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, q r}^{\mathrm{alg}}$. Let $M_{r}$ be the $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, q r}^{K}$-span of the $\mathbf{e}_{i}$. By Lemma 2.4.12, we can choose $L$ pseudo-finite separable over $K$ such that $\Gamma^{L}$ has enough $r_{0}$-units, and such that there exists
an $n \times n$ matrix $V$ over $\Gamma_{[r, q r]}^{L}$ with $w_{s}(V-U)>-w_{s}\left(U^{-1}\right)+q h /(q-1)$ for $s \in[r, q r]$. Since

$$
V^{-1} A V^{\sigma} D^{-1}=\left(U^{-1} V\right)^{-1} D\left(U^{-1} V\right)^{\sigma} D^{-1}
$$

it follows that $w_{r}\left(V^{-1} A V^{\sigma} D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>h /(q-1)$.
By Lemma 6.1.1, there exists an invertible $n \times n$ matrix $W$ over $\Gamma_{[r, q r]}^{L}$ for which the matrix $B=(V W)^{-1} A(V W)^{\sigma}$ is such that $B D^{-1}-I_{n}$ has entries in $\pi \Gamma_{r}^{L}$ and $w_{r}\left(B D^{-1}-I_{n}\right)>0$. By Lemma 6.2.1, the matrix $V W$ is actually invertible over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, q r}^{L}$.
Let $N$ be the $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$-module generated by $\mathbf{v}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{v}_{n}$ with Frobenius action defined by $F \mathbf{v}_{j}=\sum_{i} B_{i j} \mathbf{v}_{i}$; then by what we have just shown, $N \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L} \cong M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$. By Lemma 5.2.6, the generic HN-slopes of $N$ are the $w\left(D_{i i}\right)$, which by construction are also the special HN -slopes of $N$. (Compare [19, Proposition 6.9].)

Remark 6.2.3. It should also be possible to establish Proposition 6.2 .2 without the finite extension $L$ of $K$.

### 6.3 IsOCLINIC $\sigma$-MODULES

Before proceeding to the general descent problem for HN-filtrations, we analyze the isoclinic case.

Definition 6.3.1. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. We say that $M$ is isoclinic (of slope $\mu(M)$ ) if $M \otimes \Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is isoclinic. By Proposition 5.5.1, this implies that $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$ is also isoclinic.

Proposition 6.3.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ which is unit-root (isoclinic of slope 0). Then

$$
H^{0}(M)=H^{0}\left(M \otimes \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)=H^{0}\left(M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)
$$

in particular, if $K$ is algebraically closed, then $M$ admits a basis of eigenvectors.
Proof. There is no harm (thanks to Corollary 2.5.8) in assuming from the outset that $K$ is algebraically closed. In this case, the eigenvectors of $M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ all have slope 0 by Corollary 4.1.4; by Lemma 5.4.1, they all belong to $M$. Hence $M$ admits a basis of eigenvectors; in particular, $M \cong M_{0,1}^{\oplus n}$. Then $H^{0}(M)=H^{0}\left(M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)$ by Proposition 3.3.4.

Theorem 6.3.3. (a) The base change functor, from isoclinic $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ of some prescribed slope s to isoclinic $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ of slope s, is fully faithful.
(b) The base change functor, from isoclinic $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ of slope $s$ to isoclinic $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ of slope $s$, is an equivalence of categories.

In particular, any isoclinic $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is isomorphic to a direct sum of standard $\sigma$-modules of the same slope (and hence is semistable by Proposition 4.5.10).

Proof. To see that the functors are fully faithful, let $M$ and $N$ be isoclinic $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ of the same slope $s$. Then $M^{\vee} \otimes N$ is unit-root, and $\operatorname{Hom}(M, N)=H^{0}\left(M^{\vee} \otimes N\right)$, so the full faithfulness assertion follows from Proposition 6.3.2.
To see that the functor in (b) is essentially surjective, apply Proposition 6.2.2 to produce an $F$-stable $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$-lattice $N$ in $M \otimes \Gamma_{\text {an, con }}^{L}$ for some finite separable extension $L$ of $K$, which we may take to be Galois. Note that $N$ is unique by full faithfulness of the base change functor (from $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ to $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}^{L}$ ); hence the action of $G=\operatorname{Gal}(L / K)$ on $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{L}$ induces an action on $N$. By ordinary Galois descent, there is a unique $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$-lattice $M_{b}$ of $N$ such that $N=M_{b} \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; because of the uniqueness, $M_{b}$ is $F$-stable. This yields the desired result. (Compare [19, Theorem 6.10].)

Remark 6.3.4. The functor in (a) is not essentially surjective in general. For instance, if $K=k((t))$ with $k$ perfect, $M$ is an isoclinic $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$, and $b_{n}$ is the highest break of the representation of $\operatorname{Gal}\left(K^{\text {sep }} / K\right)$ on the images modulo $\pi^{n}$ of the eigenvectors of $M \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}$, then $b_{n} / n$ is bounded. By contrast, if $M$ is an isoclinic $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma, b_{n} / n$ need not be bounded.

Incidentally, Theorem 6.3.3 allows us to give a more succinct characterization of isoclinic $\sigma$-modules, which one could take as an alternate definition.

Proposition 6.3.5. Let $c, d$ be integers with $d>0$. Then a $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ is isoclinic of slope $s=c / d$ if and only if $M$ admits a $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$-lattice $N$ such that $\pi^{-c} F^{d}$ maps some (any) basis of $N$ to another basis of $N$.

Proof. If such a lattice exists, then we may apply Proposition 5.1.3 to $\left([d]_{*} M\right)(-c)$ to deduce that its generic HN-slopes are all zero. By Proposition 4.6.3, $M$ is isoclinic of slope $c / d$.
Conversely, suppose $M$ is isoclinic of slope $s$; then $\left([d]_{*} M\right)(-c)$ is isoclinic of slope 0. By Theorem 6.3.3, $\left([d]_{*} M\right)(-c)$ admits a unique $F$-stable $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ lattice $N^{\prime}$. By Proposition 5.1.2, $N^{\prime}$ in turn admits an $F$-stable $\Gamma_{\text {con-lattice }} N$; by Proposition 5.1.3, the Frobenius on $N$ carries any basis to another basis.

### 6.4 Descent of the HN-filtration

At last, we are ready to establish the slope filtration theorem [19, Theorem 6.10].

Theorem 6.4.1. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$. Then there exists a unique filtration $0=M_{0} \subset M_{1} \subset \cdots \subset M_{l}=M$ of $M$ by saturated $\sigma$-submodules with the following properties.
(a) For $i=1, \ldots, l$, the quotient $M_{i} / M_{i-1}$ is isoclinic of some slope $s_{i}$.
(b) $s_{1}<\cdots<s_{l}$.

Moreover, this filtration coincides with the Harder-Narasimhan filtration of $M$.
Proof. Since isoclinic $\sigma$-modules are semistable by Theorem 6.3.3, any filtration as in (a) and (b) is a Harder-Narasimhan filtration. In particular, the filtration is unique if it exists.
To prove existence, it suffices to show that the HN-filtration of $M^{\prime}=M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$ descends to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$. Let $M_{1}^{\prime}$ be the first step of that filtration; by Lemma 3.6.2, it is enough to check that $M_{1}^{\prime}$ descends to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ in the case $\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{1}^{\prime}\right)=1$.
By Proposition 6.2.2, there exists a finite separable extension $L$ of $K$ and a $\sigma$ module $N$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ such that $M \otimes \Gamma_{\text {an, con }}^{L} \cong N \otimes \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}^{L}$, and $N$ has the same generic and special HN-polygons. Of course there is no harm in assuming $L$ is Galois with $\operatorname{Gal}(L / K)=G$. By Theorem 5.5.2, $M_{1}^{\prime}$ descends to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{L}$; let $M_{1}$ be the descended submodule of $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$.
Let $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ be a basis of $M$, let $\mathbf{v}$ be a generator of $M_{1}$, and write $\mathbf{v}=a_{1} \mathbf{e}_{1}+$ $\cdots+a_{n} \mathbf{e}_{n}$ with $a_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {an, con }}^{L}$. Then for each $i, j$ with $a_{j} \neq 0, a_{i} / a_{j} \in \operatorname{Frac} \Gamma_{\text {an }, \text { con }}^{L}$ is invariant under $G$. By Corollary 2.4.11, $a_{i} / a_{j} \in \operatorname{Frac} \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}$ for each $i, j$ with $a_{j} \neq 0$; clearing denominators, we obtain a nonzero element of $M_{1} \cap M$. Hence $M_{1}$ descends to $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$, as desired. (Compare [19, Theorem 6.10].)

Corollary 6.4.2. For any extension $K^{\prime}$ of $K$ (complete with respect to a valuation $v_{K^{\prime}}$ extending $v_{K}$, such that $\Gamma^{K^{\prime}}$ has enough units), and any $\sigma$-module $M$ over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K}$, the $H N$-filtration of $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K^{\prime}}$ coincides with the result of tensoring the $H N$-filtration of $M$ with $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{K^{\prime}}$. In other words, the formation of the HN-filtration commutes with base change.

Proof. The characterization of the HN-filtration given by Theorem 6.4.1 is stable under base change.

Corollary 6.4.3. A $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ is semistable if and only if it is isoclinic.

Proof. If $M$ is an isoclinic $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$, then $M$ is semistable by Proposition 4.5.10. Conversely, if $M$ is not isoclinic, then by Theorem 6.4.1, $M$ admits a nonzero $\sigma$-submodule $M_{1}$ with $\mu\left(M_{1}\right)<\mu(M)$, so $M$ is not semistable.

## 7 Complements

### 7.1 Differentials and the slope filtration

The slope filtration turns out to behave nicely with respect to differentials; this is what allows the application to Crew's conjecture.

Definition 7.1.1. Let $S / R$ be an extension of topological rings. A module of continuous differentials is a topological $S$-module $\Omega_{S / R}^{1}$ equipped with a
continuous $R$-linear derivation $d: S \rightarrow \Omega_{S / R}^{1}$, having the following universal property: for any topological $S$-module $M$ equipped with a continuous $R$ linear derivation $D: S \rightarrow M$, there exists a unique morphism $\phi: \Omega_{S / R}^{1} \rightarrow M$ of topological $S$-modules such that $D=\phi \circ d$. Since the definition is via a universal property, the module of continuous differentials is unique up to unique isomorphism if it exists at all.

Convention 7.1.2. For the remainder of this section, assume that $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$, viewed as a topological $\mathcal{O}$-algebra via the levelwise topology, has a module of continuous differentials $\Omega_{\Gamma_{\text {con }} / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$ which is finite free over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$. In this case, for any finite separable extension $L$ of $K, \Omega_{\Gamma_{\text {con }} / \mathcal{O}}^{1} \otimes_{\Gamma_{\text {con }}} \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$ is a module of continuous differentials of $\Gamma_{\text {an, con }}^{L}$ over $\mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$.

Example 7.1.3. If $K=k((t))$ as in Section 2.3, we have a module of continuous differentials for $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$ over $\mathcal{O}$ given by $\Omega_{\Gamma_{\text {con }} / \mathcal{O}}^{1}=\Gamma_{\text {con }} d t$ with the formal derivation $d$ sending $\sum c_{i} t^{i}$ to $\left(\sum i c_{i} t^{i-1}\right) d t$.

REmARK 7.1.4. Note that $\Omega_{\Gamma_{\text {con }} / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$ may be viewed as a $\sigma$-module, via the action of $d \sigma$. Since $d \sigma(\omega) \equiv 0(\bmod \pi)$ for any $\omega \in \Omega_{\Gamma_{\text {con }} / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$, by Proposition 5.1.3 the generic slopes of $\Omega_{\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}} / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$ as a $\sigma$-module are all positive. By Proposition 5.5.1, the special slopes of $\Omega_{\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}} / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$ as a $\sigma$-module are also nonnegative.

Definition 7.1.5. For $S=\Gamma_{\text {con }}, \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right], \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$, define a $\nabla$-module over $S$ to be a finite free $S$-module equipped with an integrable connection $\nabla$ : $M \rightarrow M \otimes \Omega_{S / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$. (Integrability here means that the composition of $\nabla$ with the induced map $M \otimes \Omega_{S / \mathcal{O}}^{1} \rightarrow M \otimes \wedge_{S}^{2} \Omega_{S / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$ is the zero map.) Define a ( $\sigma, \nabla$ )module over $S$ to be a finite free $S$-module $M$ equipped with the structures of both a $\sigma$-module and a $\nabla$-module, which commute as in the following diagram:


Proposition 7.1.6. Let $M$ be a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$. Then each step of the HN-filtration of $M$ is a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-submodule of $M$.

Proof. Let $M_{1}$ be the first step of the HN-filtration, which is isoclinic by Theorem 6.4.1; it suffices to check that $M_{1}$ is a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-submodule of $M$. To simplify notation, write $N$ for $\Omega_{\Gamma_{\text {an }, \text { con }} / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$. Then the map $M_{1} \rightarrow\left(M / M_{1}\right) \otimes N$ induced by $\nabla$ is a morphism of $\sigma$-modules, and the slopes of $\left(M / M_{1}\right) \otimes N$ are all strictly greater than the slope of $M_{1}$ by Remark 7.1.4. By Proposition 4.6.4, the map $M_{1} \rightarrow\left(M / M_{1}\right) \otimes N$ must be zero; that is, $M_{1}$ is a $\nabla$-submodule of $M$. This proves the desired result.

Proposition 7.1.7. Let $M$ be an isoclinic $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ such that $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ admits the structure of a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module. Then $M$ admits a corresponding structure of a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module.
Proof. Write $N$ for $\Omega_{\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$, so that $\nabla$ induces an additive map $M \otimes$ $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}} \rightarrow(M \otimes N) \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$. Pick a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ of $M$, and define the map $f: M \rightarrow M \otimes N$ by

$$
f\left(\sum c_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i}\right)=\sum_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i} \otimes d c_{i}
$$

 $N \otimes \Gamma_{\text {an, con }}$. That element satisfies $F \mathbf{v}-\mathbf{v}=\mathbf{w}$ for some $\mathbf{w} \in M^{\vee} \otimes M \otimes N$ by the commutation relation between $F$ and $\nabla$. However, $M^{\vee} \otimes M$ is unitroot, so the (generic and special) slopes of $M^{\vee} \otimes M \otimes N$ are all positive by Remark 7.1.4. By Theorem 4.5.7 and Proposition 3.3.7(b1), it follows that $\mathbf{v} \in M^{\vee} \otimes M \otimes N$, so $\nabla$ acts on $M$, as desired. (Compare [19, Theorem 6.12] and [3, Lemme V.14].)

Remark 7.1.8. We suspect there is a more conceptual way of saying this in terms of splitting a certain exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules.

### 7.2 THE $p$-ADIC LOCAL MONODROMY THEOREM

We recall briefly how the slope filtration theorem, plus a theorem of Tsuzuki, yields the $p$-adic local monodromy theorem (formerly Crew's conjecture).
Convention 7.2.1. Throughout this section, retain notation as in Section 2.3, i.e., $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ is the Robba ring. Note that in this case, the integrability condition in Definition 7.1.5 is vacuous, since $\Omega_{\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }} / \mathcal{O}}^{1}$ is free of rank 1 .
Definition 7.2.2. We say a $\nabla$-module $M$ over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ is constant if it is spanned by the kernel of $\nabla$; equivalently, $M$ is isomorphic to a direct sum of trivial $\nabla$-modules. (The "trivial" $\nabla$-module here means $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ itself with the connection given by $d$.) We say $M$ is quasi-constant if $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$ is constant for some finite separable extension $L$ of $K$. We say a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module is (quasi-)constant if its underlying $\nabla$-module is (quasi-)constant.
The key external result we need here is the following result essentially due to Tsuzuki [35]. A simplified proof of Tsuzuki's result has been given by Christol [5]; however, see [2] for the corrections of some errors in [5].
Proposition 7.2.3. Let $M$ be a unit-root $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Then $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ is quasi-constant; in fact, for some finite separable extension $L$ of $K, M \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ admits a basis in the kernel of $\nabla$.
Proof. Suppose first that $M=M_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ for a unit-root $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module $M_{0}$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$. Then our desired statement is Tsuzuki's theorem [35, Theorem 4.2.6]. To reduce to this case, apply Proposition 5.1.2 to obtain a $\sigma$-stable $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$-lattice $M_{0}$; by applying Frobenius repeatedly, we see that $M_{0}$ must also be $\nabla$-stable. Thus Tsuzuki's theorem applies to give the claimed result.

Definition 7.2.4. We say a $\nabla$-module $M$ over $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ is said to be unipotent if it admits an exhaustive filtration by $\nabla$-submodules whose successive quotients are constant. We say $M$ is quasi-unipotent if $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{L}$ is unipotent for some finite separable extension $L$ of $K$. We say a ( $\sigma, \nabla$ )-module is (quasi-)unipotent if its underlying $\nabla$-module is (quasi-)unipotent.

Theorem 7.2 .5 ( $p$-ADIC LOCAL MONODROMY THEOREM). With notations as in Section 2.3 (i.e., $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$ is the Robba ring), let $M$ be a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$. Then $M$ is quasi-unipotent.

Proof. By Proposition 7.1.6, each step of the HN-filtration of $M$ is $\nabla$-stable. It is thus enough to check that each successive quotient is quasi-unipotent; in other words, we may assume that $M$ itself is isoclinic.
Note that the definition of unipotence does not depend on the Frobenius lift, so there is no harm in either applying the functor $[b]_{*}$ or in twisting. We may thus reduce to the case where $M$ is isoclinic of slope zero (i.e., is unit-root). Applying Proposition 7.2.3 then yields the desired result.

Example 7.2.6. In Theorem 7.2.5, it can certainly happen that $M$ fails to be quasi-constant. For instance, if $u^{\sigma}=q u$, and $M$ has rank two with a basis $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \mathbf{e}_{2}$ such that

$$
\begin{gathered}
F \mathbf{e}_{1}=\mathbf{e}_{1}, \quad F \mathbf{e}_{2}=q \mathbf{e}_{2} \\
\nabla \mathbf{e}_{1}=0, \quad \nabla \mathbf{e}_{2}=\mathbf{e}_{1} \otimes \frac{d u}{u}
\end{gathered}
$$

then $M$ is a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module which is unipotent but not quasi-constant.
Remark 7.2.7. The fact that quasi-unipotence follows from the existence of a slope filtration as in Theorem 6.4 .1 was originally pointed out by Tsuzuki [36, Theorem 5.2.1]. Indeed, that observation was the principal motivation for the construction of slope filtrations of $\sigma$-modules in [19].

Remark 7.2.8. We remind the reader that Theorem 7.2 .5 has also been proved (independently) by André [1] and by Mebkhout [30], using the index theory for $p$-adic differential equations developed in a series of papers by Christol and Mebkhout [6], [7], [8], [9]. This represents a completely orthogonal approach to ours, as it primarily involves the structure of the connection rather than the Frobenius. The different approaches seem to have different strengths. For example, on one hand, the Christol-Mebkhout approach seems to say more about $p$-adic differential equations on annuli over $p$-adic fields which are not discretely valued. On the other hand, our approach has a certain flexibility that the Christol-Mebkhout approach lacks; for instance, it carries over directly to the $q$-difference situation considered by André and di Vizio in [1], whereas the analogue of the Christol-Mebkhout theory seems much more difficult to develop. It also carries over to the setting of "fake annuli" arising in the problem of semistable reduction for overconvergent $F$-isocrystals: in this setting,
one replaces $k((t))$ by the completion of $k\left[t_{1}, t_{1}^{-1}, \ldots, t_{n}, t_{n}^{-1}\right]$ for a valuation which totally orders monomials (i.e., the valuations of $t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n}$ are linearly independent over $\mathbb{Q}$ ). See [25] for further details.

### 7.3 Generic versus special Revisited

The adjectives "generic" and "special" were introduced in Chapter 5 to describe the two paradigms for attaching slopes to $\sigma$-modules over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Here is a bit of clarification as to why this was done. Throughout this section, retain notation as in Section 2.3.
Let $X \rightarrow$ Spec $k \llbracket t \rrbracket$ be a smooth proper morphism, for $k$ a field of characteristic $p>0$. Then the crystalline cohomology of $X$, equipped with the action of the absolute Frobenius, gives a $(\sigma, \nabla)$-module $M$ over the ring $\mathcal{O} \llbracket u \rrbracket$; the crystalline cohomology of the generic fibre corresponds to $M \otimes \Gamma$, whereas the crystalline cohomology of the special fibre corresponds to $M \otimes(\mathcal{O} \llbracket u \rrbracket / u \mathcal{O} \llbracket u \rrbracket)$. However, the latter is isomorphic to $M \otimes\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}} \cap \mathcal{O}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \llbracket u \rrbracket\right)$ by "Dwork's trick" [13, Lemma 6.3]. Thus the generic and special HN-polygons correspond precisely to the Newton polygons of the generic and special fibres; the fact that the special HN-polygon lies above the generic HN-polygon (i.e., Proposition 5.5.1) in this case follows from Grothendieck's specialization theorem.
This gives a theoretical explanation for why Proposition 5.5.1 holds, but a more computationally explicit example may also be useful. (Thanks to Frans Oort for suggesting this presentation.) Suppose that $\sigma$ is chosen so that $u^{\sigma}=u^{p}$. Let $M$ be the rank $2 \sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$ defined by

$$
F \mathbf{v}_{1}=\mathbf{v}_{2}, \quad F \mathbf{v}_{2}=p \mathbf{v}_{1}+u \mathbf{v}_{2}
$$

Then $\mathbf{v}_{1}$ is a cyclic vector and $F^{2} \mathbf{v}_{1}-u F \mathbf{v}_{1}-p \mathbf{v}_{1}=0$, so by Lemma 5.2.4, the generic HN-polygon of $M$ has the same slopes as the Newton polygon of the polynomial $x^{2}-u x-p$, namely 0 and 1 . On the other hand, Dwork's trick implies that the special HN-polygon of $M$ has slopes $1 / 2$ and $1 / 2$.

### 7.4 Splitting exact sequences (AGain)

For reference, we collect here some more results about computing $H^{1}$ of $\sigma$ modules.

Proposition 7.4.1. For any $\sigma$-modules $M_{1}, M_{2}$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, the map $\operatorname{Ext}\left(M_{1}, M_{2}\right) \rightarrow \operatorname{Ext}\left(M_{1} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}, M_{2} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\right)$ is surjective.

Proof. Let

$$
0 \rightarrow M_{2} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}} \rightarrow M \rightarrow M_{1} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}} \rightarrow 0
$$

be a short exact sequence of $\sigma$-modules. Choose a basis of $M_{2}$, then lift to $M$ a basis of $M_{1}$; the result is a basis of $M$. Let $A$ be the matrix via which $F$ acts on this basis; after rescaling the basis of $M_{2}$ suitably, we can put ourselves into the situation of Lemma 6.1.1. We can now perform the iteration of Lemma 6.1.1 in
such a way as to respect the short exact sequence (i.e., take $u_{i j l m}=0$ whenever the pair $(i, j)$ falls in the lower left block); as in the proof of Proposition 6.2.2, we end up with a model $M_{b}$ of $M$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, which by construction sits in an exact sequence $0 \rightarrow M_{2} \rightarrow M_{b} \rightarrow M_{1} \rightarrow 0$. This yields the desired surjectivity.

We next give some generalizations of parts of Proposition 3.3.7.
Proposition 7.4.2. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ whose generic $H N$ slopes are all nonnegative. Then the map $H^{1}(M) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(M \otimes \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}\right)$ is injective.

Proof. By Proposition 5.1.2, we can choose an $F$-stable $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$-lattice $M_{0}$ of $M$. Let $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ be a basis of $M_{0}$, and define the matrix $A$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}$ by $F \mathbf{e}_{j}=\sum_{i} A_{i j} \mathbf{e}_{i}$. Choose $r>0$ such that $A$ has entries in $\Gamma_{r}$ and $w_{r}(A) \geq 0$. Suppose $\mathbf{v} \in M$ and $\mathbf{w} \in M \otimes \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$ satisfy $\mathbf{v}=\mathbf{w}-F \mathbf{w}$, and write $\mathbf{v}=$ $\sum_{i} x_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ and $\mathbf{w}=\sum_{i} y_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ with $x_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ and $y_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$; then $x_{i}=$ $y_{i}-\sum_{j} A_{i j} y_{j}^{\sigma}$.
If $\mathbf{w} \notin M$, we can choose $m<0$ such that $v_{m}\left(x_{i}\right)=\infty$ and $0<$ $\min _{i} \min _{l \leq m}\left\{v_{l, r}\left(y_{i}\right)\right\}<\infty$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\min _{l \leq m}\left\{v_{l, r}\left(y_{i}\right)\right\} & >q^{-1} \min _{l \leq m}\left\{v_{l, r}\left(y_{i}\right)\right\} \\
& \geq q^{-1} \min _{l \leq m} \min _{j}\left\{v_{l, r}\left(A_{i j} y_{j}^{\sigma}\right)\right\} \\
& \geq q^{-1} \min _{l \leq m} \min _{j}\left\{v_{l, r}\left(y_{j}^{\sigma}\right)\right\} \\
& =q^{-1} \min _{l \leq m} \min _{j}\left\{r v_{l}\left(y_{j}^{\sigma}\right)+l\right\} \\
& \geq \min _{l \leq m} \min _{j}\left\{r v_{l}\left(y_{j}\right)+l\right\} \\
& =\min _{l \leq m} \min _{j}\left\{v_{l, r}\left(y_{j}\right)\right\} ;
\end{aligned}
$$

taking the minimum over all $i$ yields a contradiction. Hence $\mathbf{w} \in M$, yielding the injectivity of the map $H^{1}(M) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(M \otimes \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}\right)$.

Proposition 7.4.3. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ whose $H N$-slopes are all positive. Then $F-1$ is a bijection on $M$, i.e., $H^{0}(M)=H^{1}(M)=0$.

Proof. By Proposition 5.1.2, we can choose an $F$-stable $\Gamma$-lattice $M_{0}$ of $M$ such that $F\left(M_{0}\right) \subseteq \pi M_{0}$. Then $F-1$ is a bijection on $M_{0} / \pi M_{0}$, hence also on $M_{0}$ and $M$.

Lemma 7.4.4. For $L / K$ a finite Galois extension, and $M$ a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}$, the map $H^{1}(M) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}\right)$ is injective.

Proof. Put $G=\operatorname{Gal}(L / K)$. Given $\mathbf{w} \in M$, suppose that there exists $\mathbf{v} \in$ $M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$ such that $\mathbf{w}=\mathbf{v}-F \mathbf{v}$. Then we also have $\mathbf{w}=\mathbf{v}^{\prime}-F \mathbf{v}^{\prime}$ for

$$
\mathbf{v}^{\prime}=\frac{1}{\# G} \sum_{g \in G} \mathbf{v}^{g}
$$

which is $G$-invariant and hence belongs to $M$.
Theorem 7.4.5. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}$ whose $H N$-slopes are all positive. Then the exact sequence

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \rightarrow M \rightarrow N \rightarrow \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}} \rightarrow 0 \tag{7.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

splits if and only if $N$ has smallest $H N$-slope zero.
Proof. If the sequence splits, then $P(N)=P(M)+P\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\right)$ by Proposition 4.7.2, so $N$ has smallest HN-slope zero. We verify the converse first in the case where $K$ is algebraically closed, so that $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}=\Gamma_{\text {an, con }}^{\text {alg }}$.
We proceed by induction on $\operatorname{rank}(M)$. In case $M$ is isoclinic, then the inequality $P(N) \geq P(M)+P\left(\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}\right)$ from Proposition 4.7.2 and the hypothesis that $N$ has smallest HN-slope zero together force $P(N)=P(M)+P\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\right)$; by Proposition 4.7.2 again, (7.4.6) splits. In case $M$ is not isoclinic, let $M_{1}$ be the first step in the HN-filtration of $M$. By Proposition 4.7.2, we have

$$
P(N) \geq P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(N / M_{1}\right) \geq P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(M / M_{1}\right)+P\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\right)
$$

since $P(N)$ has smallest slope 0 , so does $P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(N / M_{1}\right)$. Since $P\left(M_{1}\right)$ has positive slope, $P\left(N / M_{1}\right)$ must have smallest slope zero. Hence by the induction hypothesis, the exact sequence $0 \rightarrow M / M_{1} \rightarrow N / M_{1} \rightarrow \Gamma_{\text {an,con }} \rightarrow 0$ splits, say as $N / M_{1} \cong M / M_{1} \oplus M^{\prime}$ with $M^{\prime} \cong \Gamma_{\text {an, con }}$. Let $N^{\prime}$ be the inverse image of $M^{\prime}$ under the surjection $N \rightarrow N / M_{1}$; it follows now that (7.4.6) splits if and only if $0 \rightarrow M_{1} \rightarrow N^{\prime} \rightarrow M^{\prime} \rightarrow 0$ splits. By Proposition 4.7.2 again, $P(N) \geq P\left(N^{\prime}\right)+P\left(M / M_{1}\right) \geq P\left(M_{1}\right)+P\left(M / M_{1}\right)+P\left(\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}\right)$, and $P\left(M / M_{1}\right)$ has all slopes positive, so $P\left(N^{\prime}\right)$ has smallest slope zero. Again by the induction hypothesis, $0 \rightarrow M_{1} \rightarrow N^{\prime} \rightarrow M^{\prime} \rightarrow 0$ splits, yielding the splitting of (7.4.6).
To summarize, we have proved that if $N$ has smallest HN-slope zero, then (7.4.6) splits after tensoring with $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}$; it remains to descend this splitting back to $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}$. To do this, apply Proposition 6.2 .2 to produce a $\sigma$ module $M_{0}$ over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, for some finite Galois extension $L$ of $K$, with $M_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L} \cong M \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{L}$. Then apply Proposition 7.4.1 to descend the given exact sequence, after tensoring up to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \text { con }}^{L}$, to an exact sequence $0 \rightarrow M_{0} \rightarrow N_{0} \rightarrow \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \rightarrow 0$. We have shown that the exact sequence $0 \rightarrow M_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}} \rightarrow N_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}} \rightarrow \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}} \rightarrow 0$ splits; by Proposition 7.4.2, the exact sequence $0 \rightarrow M_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \rightarrow N_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \rightarrow \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \rightarrow 0$ splits.
Choose $\mathbf{w} \in M_{0}$ whose image in $H^{1}\left(M_{0}\right)$ corresponds to the exact sequence $0 \rightarrow M_{0} \rightarrow N_{0} \rightarrow \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \rightarrow 0$; we have now shown that the class of $\mathbf{w}$
in $H^{1}\left(M_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)$ vanishes. By Proposition 7.4.3, there exists a unique $\mathbf{v} \in M_{0} \otimes \Gamma^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with $\mathbf{w}=\mathbf{v}-F \mathbf{v}$. Since the class of $\mathbf{w}$ in $H^{1}\left(M_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)$ vanishes, we have $\mathbf{v} \in M_{0} \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; since $M_{0}$ is free over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ and $\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \cap \Gamma^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]=\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{L}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, we have $\mathbf{v} \in M_{0}$. Hence the sequence (7.4.6) splits after tensoring with $\Gamma_{\text {an,con }}^{L}$. By Lemma 7.4.4, (7.4.6) also splits, as desired.

### 7.5 FULL FAITHFULNESS

Here is de Jong's original application of the reverse filtration [13, Proposition 8.2].

Proposition 7.5.1. Suppose that $K$ admits a valuation $p$-basis. Let $M$ be a $\sigma$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ admitting an injective $F$-equivariant $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$-linear morphism $\phi: M \rightarrow \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right](m)$ for some integer $m$. Then $\phi^{-1}\left(\Gamma_{\operatorname{con}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)$ is a $\sigma$-submodule of $M$ of rank 1 , and its extension to $\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is equal to the first step of the reverse filtration of $M$. In particular, $M$ has highest generic slope $m$ with multiplicity 1.

Proof. We first suppose $K$ is algebraically closed (this case being [13, Corollary 5.7]). Let $M_{1}$ be the first step of the reverse filtration of $M$. Then $M_{1} \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ is isomorphic to a direct sum of standard $\sigma$-modules of some slope $s_{1}=c / d$; by Lemma 5.4 .1 (applied to $\left.\left([d]_{*}\left(M_{1} \otimes \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)\right)(-c)\right), M_{1}$ itself is isomorphic to a direct sum of standard $\sigma$-modules of slope $s_{1}$.
The map $\phi$ induces a nonzero $F$-equivariant map $M_{1} \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \rightarrow$ $\Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](m)$, and hence a nonzero element of $H^{0}\left(M_{1}^{\vee} \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](m)\right)$. By Corollary 4.1.4, we must have $m=s_{1}$, and so $M_{1} \cong \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](m)^{\oplus n}$ for some $n$. By Proposition 3.3.4, we have $H^{0}\left(M_{1}^{\vee}(m)\right)=H^{0}\left(M_{1}^{\vee} \otimes \Gamma^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](m)\right)$, and so $\phi$ actually induces an injective $F$-equivariant map $M_{1} \rightarrow \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right](m)$.
To summarize, $M$ has highest generic slope $m$, and the first step of the reverse filtration is contained in $\phi^{-1}\left(\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)$. Since the latter is a $\sigma$-submodule of $M$ of rank no more than 1, we have the desired result.
We now suppose $K$ is general. Put $M^{\prime}=M \otimes_{\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]} \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$; by Proposition 2.2.21(c), the composite map

$$
\psi: M^{\prime} \xrightarrow{\phi \otimes 1} \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \otimes_{\Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]} \Gamma_{\mathrm{con}}^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right] \xrightarrow{\mu} \Gamma^{\mathrm{alg}}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]
$$

is also injective. By the above, $\psi^{-1}\left(\Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)$ is a $\sigma$-submodule of $M^{\prime}$ of rank 1 , and coincides with the first step of the reverse filtration of $M^{\prime}$. Let $\mathbf{e}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{e}_{n}$ be a basis of $M$, put $\mathbf{v}=\psi^{-1}(1)$, and write $\mathbf{v}=\sum x_{i} \mathbf{e}_{i}$ with $x_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}^{\text {alg }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$. Then $1=\psi(\mathbf{v})=\sum x_{i} \phi\left(\mathbf{e}_{i}\right)$; by Proposition 2.2.21(b), we have $x_{i} \in \Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ for $i=1, \ldots, n$. Hence $\mathbf{v} \in \phi^{-1}\left(\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)$, so the latter is a $\sigma$-submodule of $M$ of rank 1. This yields the desired result.

Remark 7.5.2. Proposition 7.5 .1 can be used to reduce instances of showing $H^{0}(M)=H^{0}\left(M \otimes \Gamma\left[\pi^{-1}\right]\right)$, for $M$ an $F$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$, to showing
that a certain class in $H^{1}(N)$, where $N$ is a related $F$-module over $\Gamma_{\text {con }}\left[\pi^{-1}\right]$ with positive HN-slopes, vanishes. Thanks to Proposition 7.4.2, this in turn reduces to checking vanishing of the class in $H^{1}\left(N \otimes \Gamma_{\mathrm{an}, \mathrm{con}}\right)$, where either Dwork's trick, in the case of [13], or the $p$-adic local monodromy theorem, in the case of [20], can be brought to bear. Note that by Theorem 7.4.5, it is enough to check vanishing of a class in $H^{1}\left(N \otimes \Gamma_{\text {an,con }}\right)$ after replacing $K$ by a finite separable extension.

## References

[1] Y. André, Filtrations de type Hasse-Arf et monodromie p-adique, Invent. Math. 148 (2002), 285-317.
[2] Y. André and L. di Vizio, $q$-difference equations and $p$-adic local monodromy, in Analyse complexe, systèmes dynamiques, sommabilité des séries divergentes et théories galoisiennes (I) - Volume en l'honneur de Jean-Pierre Ramis (M. Loday-Richaud, ed.), Astérisque 296 (2004), 55111.
[3] L. Berger, Représentations p-adiques et équations différentielles, Invent. Math. 148 (2002), 219-284.
[4] L. Berger, Équations différentielles $p$-adiques et $(\phi, N)$-modules filtrés, preprint available at arXiv: math.NT/0406601 (version of 29 Jun 2004).
[5] G. Christol, About a Tsuzuki theorem, in p-adic functional analysis (Ioannina, 2000), Lecture Notes in Pure and Appl. Math. 222, Dekker, New York, 2001, 63-74.
[6] G. Christol and Z. Mebkhout, Sur le théorème de l'indice des équations différentielles p-adiques. I, Ann. Inst. Fourier (Grenoble) 43 (1993), 15451574.
[7] G. Christol and Z. Mebkhout, Sur le théorème de l'indice des équations différentielles p-adiques. II, Ann. of Math. 146 (1997), 345-410.
[8] G. Christol and Z. Mebkhout, Sur le théorème de l'indice des équations différentielles p-adiques. III, Ann. of Math. 151 (2000), 385-457.
[9] G. Christol and Z. Mebkhout, Sur le théorème de l'indice des équations différentielles p-adiques. IV, Invent. Math. 143 (2001), 629-672.
[10] P. Colmez, Série principale unitaire pour $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(\mathbb{Q}_{p}\right)$ et représentations triangulines de dimension 2, preprint available at http://www.math.jussieu.fr/~colmez/.
[11] R. Crew, $F$-isocrystals and $p$-adic representations, in Algebraic geometry, Bowdoin, 1985 (Brunswick, Maine, 1985), Proc. Sympos. Pure Math. 46, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, 1987, 111-138.
[12] R. Crew, Finiteness theorems for the cohomology of an overconvergent isocrystal on a curve, Ann. Sci. École Norm. Sup. 31 (1998), 717-763.
[13] A.J. de Jong, Homomorphisms of Barsotti-Tate groups and crystals in positive characteristic, Invent. Math. 134 (1998), 301-333.
[14] J. Dieudonné, Lie groups and Lie hyperalgebras over a field of characteristic $p>0$. IV, Amer. J. Math. 77 (1955), 429-452.
[15] A. Grothendieck, Éléments de géométrie algébrique. IV. Étude locale des schémas et des morphismes de schémas. I, Publ. Math. IHÉS 20 (1964).
[16] G. Harder and M.S. Narasimhan, On the cohomology groups of moduli spaces of vector bundles on curves, Math. Ann. 212 (1974/75), 215-248.
[17] U. Hartl and R. Pink, Vector bundles with a Frobenius structure on the punctured unit disc, Compos. Math. 140 (2004), 689-716.
[18] N.M. Katz, Slope filtration of F-crystals, in Journées de Géométrie Algébrique de Rennes (Rennes, 1978), Vol. I, Astérisque 63 (1979), 113163.
[19] K.S. Kedlaya, A p-adic local monodromy theorem, Annals of Math. 160 (2004), 93-184.
[20] K.S. Kedlaya, Full faithfulness for overconvergent $F$-isocrystals, in $G e o-$ metric aspects of Dwork theory, de Gruyter, Berlin, 2004, 819-835.
[21] K.S. Kedlaya, Local monodromy for $p$-adic differential equations: an overview, Intl. J. of Number Theory 1 (2005), 109-154.
[22] K.S. Kedlaya, Finiteness of rigid cohomology with coefficients, Duke Math. J., to appear; preprint available at arXiv: math.AG/0208027 (version of 2 Nov 2005).
[23] K.S. Kedlaya, Fourier transforms and p-adic "Weil II", preprint available at arXiv: math.NT/0210149 (version of 20 Jul 2005).
[24] K.S. Kedlaya, Semistable reduction for overconvergent $F$-isocrystals, I: Unipotence and logarithmic extensions, preprint available at arXiv: math. NT/0405069 (version of 24 Jul 2005).
[25] K.S. Kedlaya, The $p$-adic local monodromy theorem for fake annuli, I: The monomial case, preprint available at arXiv: math.NT/0507496 (version of 8 Aug 2005).
[26] M. Kisin, Crystalline representations and $F$-crystals, preprint available at http://math.uchicago.edu/~kisin.
[27] F.-V. Kuhlmann, untitled book in progress, available at http://math.usask.ca/~fvk/Fvkbook.htm (references to version of 16 Mar 2005).
[28] M. Lazard, Les zéros des fonctions analytiques d'une variable sur un corps valué complet, Publ. Math. IHÉS 14 (1962), 47-75.
[29] Ju.I. Manin, Theory of commutative formal groups over fields of finite characteristic (Russian), Uspehi Mat. Nauk 18 (1963), 3-90.
[30] Z. Mebkhout, Analogue $p$-adique du théorème de Turrittin et le théorème de la monodromie p-adique, Invent. Math. 148 (2002), 319-351.
[31] D.S. Passman, The algebraic structure of group rings, Robert E. Krieger Publishing Co. Inc., Melbourne, FL, 1985.
[32] P. Schneider, Nonarchimedean functional analysis, Springer Monographs in Mathematics, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 2002.
[33] S.S. Shatz, The decomposition and specialization of algebraic families of vector bundles, Compos. Math. 35 (1977), 163-187.
[34] N. Tsuzuki, The overconvergence of morphisms of étale $\phi-\nabla$-spaces on a local field, Compos. Math. 103 (1996), 227-239.
[35] N. Tsuzuki, Finite local monodromy of overconvergent unit-root $F$ isocrystals on a curve, Amer. J. Math. 120 (1998), 1165-1190.
[36] N. Tsuzuki, Slope filtration of quasi-unipotent overconvergent $F$ isocrystals, Ann. Inst. Fourier (Grenoble) 48 (1998), 379-412.

Kiran S. Kedlaya<br>Dept. of Mathematics<br>Massachusetts Institute of Technology<br>77 Massachusetts Avenue<br>Cambridge, MA 02139<br>USA<br>kedlaya@mit.edu


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ Thanks to Olivier Brinon for providing detailed feedback on [19, Chapter 3], to Francesco Baldassarri and Frans Oort for some suggestions on the exposition of this paper, to Mark Kisin for suggesting the statement of Theorem 6.3.3, and to Bruno Chiarellotto for pointing out an error in a prior version of Proposition 3.5.4. Thanks also to Baldassarri and to Pierre Berthelot for organizing two workshops on $F$-isocrystals and rigid cohomology in December 2004 and June 2005, which helped spark the aforementioned discussions. The author was supported by NSF grant number DMS-0400727.

